

# **NEW TESTAMENT**

**LEONARD THORN**

**1862**

# **Wipf and Stock Publishers**

## **Bible Versions Reproduction Series: Volume #35**

**THE NEW TESTAMENT** OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST

**AS REVISED AND CORRECTED BY THE SPIRITS**

**By: Leonard Thorn**

**1862** Original Publisher, **THE PROPRIETORS**, New York

326 Pages

Copyright © 2000 by John S. Wipf, Jr. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. Except as permitted under the United States Copyright Act of 1976, no part of this publication may be reproduced or distributed in any form or by any means, or stored in a data base retrieval system, without prior written permission of the publisher.

Wipf and Stock Publishers is pleased to present to you its digital reproduction of this book. By purchasing this book and receiving ownership of this copy, you expressly agree that you and any one to whom you transfer this book to is not entitled to reproduce or to allow anyone else to reproduce all or any portion of its contents without our prior consent.

If the purchaser does not agree to the foregoing terms of this sale, promptly return this copy for a refund of the purchase price. By retaining possession of this copy, you acknowledge that you agree to be bound by the foregoing terms. If you have any questions concerning this matter, please contact Wipf and Stock Publishers at the following address:

Wipf and Stock Publishers  
1396 E. Washington Blvd.  
Pasadena, CA, 91104  
1-626-7 97-4756

Printer: James Baden  
Binder: Golden Rule Bindery

ISBN: 1-57910-384-7

# Bible Versions Reproduction Series

The purpose of the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** is to make rare and out-of-print versions of the Bible readily and inexpensively available to scholars, Bible students, and Bible collectors. These reproductions are being offered especially to members of the International Society of Bible Collectors.

While still searching for hard-to-find original printings of Bible translations, many collectors have indicated what a delight it would be to have on their own shelves accurate reproductions of Bible versions currently available only in museums, libraries and private collections. Now such an opportunity is being offered by a collector who is himself a member of our Society.

It would be rare to imagine a more enthusiastic member of the ISBC than my long-time friend Jim Baden. Since joining the Society, he has amassed an extraordinary collection. Visiting his library could be a temptation to violate the tenth commandment were it not for his great generosity and eagerness to share what he has brought together.

It is essential, of course, that the reproduction process pose no threat to the integrity of the volumes being copied—no matter how fragile the precious originals may be. Such a method is now available, and Jim is demonstrating his confidence in the process by being the first to make some of his own prized volumes available.

Among the first publications in this Series is a reproduction of Isaac Leiser's 1904 *The Twenty-four Books of the Holy Scriptures*. Society members will especially enjoy knowing that the particular volume by Leiser was once the personal copy of Arnold Ehlert, the founder and first president of the ISBC. "A gift to A. D. Ehlert from Dr. H. A. Ironside, summer 1947" is handwritten on the flyleaf.

Jim Baden shares the reverence for Scripture that has moved the leaders of our Society to give so freely of their time and energy for the past thirty-five years. He has profound respect and gratitude for the heroes and heroines of Bible translation—from Wycliffe and Tyndale down to the present time—who worked so hard, even sometimes at the risk of life—to make the Bible so readily available to the world today. Like other members of the ISBC, Jim regards the Bible as more than just a great book to be collected. To use his own words, he speaks of the Scriptures as "God's method of communicating with his intelligent creatures . . . to be most carefully read and contemplated to discover its meaning and value for life in the present and future."

What is more helpful in discovering the meaning of Scripture than to have readily at hand a good collection of different versions? Some have even suggested they would rather have a variety of versions than commentaries! As the translators of the 1611 King James Version quote Saint Augustine in their memorable preface, “ ‘Variety of Translations is profitable for the finding out of the sense of the Scriptures.’ ” “Therefore blessed be they,” the preface continues, “and most honoured be their name, that break the ice, and giveth onset upon that which helpeth forward to the saving of souls. Now what can be more available thereto, than to deliver God’s book unto God’s people in a tongue which they understand?” And speaking of those who have labored to prepare translations other than the King James, the 1611 scholars urge “that we acknowledge them to have been raised up of God, for the building and furnishing of his Church, and that they deserve to be had of us and of posterity in everlasting remembrance.”

It is in this spirit and for this purpose that the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** has been inaugurated.

William E. Paul, Editor, *Bible Versions and Editions*; Don Heese, Journal Production Manager; Sid Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary; Mark Mage, Editorial Assistant; Jim Baden and this writer have each supplied several hard-to-find versions for this reproduction. \*

It is hoped that purchasers of volumes from this series will loan for copying other versions and editions that will become part of this reproduction Series. Those so doing will be rewarded with a free copy of a version of their choice from the Series.

Those interested are urged to contact the Publisher or Sidney Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary of the International Society of Bible Collectors, at: Box 20695, Houston, TX. 77225.

Graham Maxwell  
(Charter Member #12)

\*additional versions supplied by:  
Bill Chamberlain

# Biographical Sketch of Leonard Thorn

The work of Leonard Thorn, published in New York City in 1861, and titled *The New Testament of Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ as Revised and Corrected by The Spirits* fails to qualify as a true translation by all serious Bible students. It “quotes” Jesus in the “Introductory Remarks” as saying, “I, Jesus, came in spirit bodily, and revised and corrected the first four books of the New Testament.” Thorn claims the book of Acts and the Pauline Epistles were “corrected” by Paul, who came “personally” to do so. James, Peter, John and Jude also came “in the spirit personally” to revise and correct their books as well. The reason given for these “spirits” returning is that “many errors” had entered the New Testament books through improper translation and through the efforts of “designing men.”

Thorn’s work closely follows the *King James Version*, although much of the New Testament is omitted, the epistles are shortened, Revelation has only six chapters and Hebrews is omitted entirely. Several pages of non-Biblical material are also included.

The book closes with a four-page description of the “New Dispensation by the Spirit of Christ,” which explains that Jesus “appeared in Spirit in 1861” to announce that the “new era,” called “the coming of Christ” had commenced “about the year 1847.” This bold declaration is then signed “Jesus, the Christ.”

Little is known of Thorn, except that he was apparently a “Spiritualist,” who sincerely believed he had accomplished his work “through a superior medium, by the direction of God.”

— William E. Paul, Editor  
Bible Editions & Versions



THE  
NEW TESTAMENT  
OF  
OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR  
JESUS CHRIST  
AS REVISED AND CORRECTED  
BY  
THE SPIRITS.

---

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1861, by  
**LEONARD THORN,**  
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the  
Southern District of New York.

---

PUBLISHED BY THE PROPRIETORS.  
NEW YORK CITY.

# THE ORDER

## OF THE

### BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT,

With the number of Chapters in each Book, and the number of years from the death of Christ to the time the Books were written.

	Years from the Death of Christ.	Number of Chapters.		Years from the Death of Christ.	Number of Chapters.
MATTHEW, . . . . .	6	27	II. THESSALONIANS, . . . . .	26	2
MARK, . . . . .	7	16	I. TIMOTHY, . . . . .	9	6
LUKE, . . . . .	15	22	II. TIMOTHY, . . . . .	13	4
JOHN, . . . . .	19	21	TITUS, . . . . .	18	3
THE ACTS, . . . . .	9	28	PHILEMON, . . . . .	20	1
ROMANS, . . . . .	7	7	EPISTLE TO JAMES, . . . . .	19	5
I. CORINTHIANS, . . . . .	16	15	I. PETER, . . . . .	8	5
II. CORINTHIANS, . . . . .	17	12	II. PETER, . . . . .	8	3
GALATIANS, . . . . .	16	6	I. JOHN, . . . . .	21	4
EPHESIANS, . . . . .	16	6	II. JOHN, . . . . .	23	1
PHILIPPIANS, . . . . .	16	4	III. JOHN, . . . . .	24	1
COLOSSIANS, . . . . .	20	4	JUDE, . . . . .	16	1
I. THESSALONIANS, . . . . .	25	5	REVELATIONS, . . . . .	60	6
			NEW DISPENSATION, . . . . .	1827	1

Christ is not called God in this book, but God is called LORD in thirty-nine different places, namely :

Page.	Book.	ter.	Verse	Lord.	Page.	Book.	Chap-ter.	Verse.	Lord.
7	Matthew,	1	13	Lord.	164	Acts,	4	29	Lord.
8	"	1	19	"	171	"	7	49	"
11	"	4	27	"	189	"	11	8	"
36	"	20	42	"	193	"	17	27	"
48	"	27	2	"	194	"	18	9	"
72	Mark,	12	29	"	200	"	21	14	"
80	Luke,	1	9	"	220	Romans,	5	6	"
80	"	1	11	"	221	"	5	8	"
80	"	1	15	"	221	"	5	8	"
81	"	1	25	"	221	"	5	9	"
81	"	1	27	"	227	I. Corinth.	3	5	"
82	"	2	9	"	229	"	6	8	"
82	"	2	9	"	229	"	6	15	"
83	"	2	22	"	228	"	4	17	"
83	"	2	23	"	263	Ephesians,	7	8	"
83	"	2	28	"	271	Colossians,	3	13	"
84	"	2	38	"	271	"	3	14	"
84	"	2	38	"	272	"	3	19	"
89	"	5	17	"	272	"	3	20	"
160	Acts.	2	21	"					



# INTRODUCTORY REMARKS,

AND EXPLANATIONS

BY

## THE SPIRIT OF JESUS CHRIST.

I was born about 1861 years since, in the town of Bethlehem, in Judea. I lived about 34 years in the flesh. I was of the lineage of David, as the prophets foretold.

My father's name was Joseph. My mother's name was Mary.

I was about thirty years and four months old when I began to preach.

I preached about three years and a half. I was crucified by the mistaken Jews. My body was laid in the sepulchre. My spirit only arose, and on the third day I was seen. The watchmen were entranced by a spirit, and then the spirits took my body away.

I, Jesus, came in spirit bodily, and revised and corrected the first four books of the new testament, namely, Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, and also the Revelations.

There were errors in all of the Books of the New Testament, and those errors came from different causes, namely: First, there were many errors from improper translation. Second, also from the variation of the phrases of the times. Third, many errors had found their way into

that book by designing men. And from these and other causes, many of the sayings, doings and writings of Christ and his Apostles have been misunderstood. It therefore made it important that the book should be revised and corrected.

The question will undoubtedly be asked, "Why did Christ correct the four Evangelists and the Revelations, instead of the writers themselves?" Because I, Jesus, knew how to correct them better than any other spirits, even the writers of those books.

Paul came personally in the spirit and corrected the Acts of the Apostles, and all of the other books in this testament which are called Paul's writings.

James, Peter, John, Jude, all came in the spirit personally, and revised and corrected their own books.

We have long sought for an opportunity to accomplish this work, and now, through a superior medium, by the direction of God, the Father, we have accomplished the work, and blessed be His holy name that He enabled us to accomplish it.

## INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

### EXPLANATIONS.

A few explanations are necessary, in order to have the reader better understand what he reads in this book.

#### I. ANGELS.

Angels in this book hath more meanings than one. In some instances it means only a messenger, whether a spirit messenger or a messenger in the flesh, and in some places it has a reference to a spirit messenger only, and in other places, simply a messenger in the flesh.

#### II. GRAVE

Grave means only a place of burial.

#### III. RESURRECTION.

Resurrections means only the resurrections of the spirits.

When the body dies, the spirit comes forth a spirit body. That is what is called the resurrection from the dead, or being born of the spirit.

The spirit is not changed by the death of the body; it has similar feelings and desires it had before it left the body, and sometimes they continue in that condition for a long space of time, and some, in a short time repent of their sins and follies, and

commence to live new lives, and in due time they all may become holy and happy spirits or angels, whatever might have been their condition in this life; but mankind suffer a great loss by continuing in sin and folly while in this life.

#### IV. GHOST.

A ghost, and spirit, mean one and the same thing; a ghost always meaning the spirit of a person; hence, the Holy Ghost is a Holy Spirit of a person, and should be called the Holy Spirit. The word ghost was never applied to God, only to the spirit of a person.

#### V. SIN AGAINST THE HOLY GHOST.

Sinning against the Holy Ghost is sinning against the spirit of a holy person.

Those who refuse to commune with, or hear from the spirits of the departed, (especially those who are holy, or scoff, or in any way insult them, or oppose them, or make light of spiritual communion, sin against the Holy Ghost, which is one of the worst sins that can be committed.

The Spirits wish to come

## INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

and commune with you, and teach you of Heavenly and Divine things, in order to make you wise concerning your future condition.

### VI. EVIL SPIRITS.

Evil Spirits in this book refer to spirits who once lived in the flesh, and were men, women and children; but were disobedient, ungovernable, murderers, liars, thieves, drunkards, deceivers, opposed to Spiritual Communications and teachings; those who live in idleness and do not educate themselves, and opposed to progression; children who are disobedient to parents, and who refuse to go to school, choose ignorance and folly, rather than good education. That they may be exalted in this life, and in the spirit life.

### VII. HEAVEN.

Heaven is a condition of happiness without regard to location.

### VIII. SOUL.

Soul hath many meanings; sometimes it means the spirit and body together, sometimes it has reference to the spirit without the body, and sometimes the word soul is applied to the body without the spirit.

The spirit of an animal is sometimes called soul.

### IX. SATAN.

Satan often means only an opposer, but sometimes an evil spirit.

### X. HELL.

Hell does not mean the grave or place of burial, only a condition of unhappiness without regard to location.

### XI. ADULTERY.

The word adultery, which is used in the New Testament, was translated from the original word, which was used to signify the worship of Idols.

### XII. FORNICATION.

Fornication often means the worship of Idols, and sometimes it means following the examples of other nations. The original word which the word Fornication was translated from, meant only the worship of Idols.

### XIII. SPIRIT FROM GOD.

The Holy Spirit from God is the spirit of some holy person which has once been in the flesh.

### XIV. SPIRIT OF GOD.

The spirit of God, is the controlling Spirit of all spirits.

## INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

### XV. ATONEMENT.

I, Jesus, came not to atone for, or to forgive sins, but came as a medium or mediator, through whom God hath spoken to the children of men, and by following my precepts and examples the world will be saved from sinning, and hence from the consequences of sin.

Every person will be rewarded according to their works. There is no getting rid of the consequences of our deeds.

### XVI. SWINE.

Swine spoken of in the New Testament, which ran violently down a steep place into the water and were drowned, were controlled by evil spirits of mankind, who entered the swine at the request of Christ. This was done to alarm the people, and to show them what power was given to Christ by the Father, and to show that the spirits of mankind could control animals.

### XVII. WONDERS BY CHRIST AND HIS APOSTLES.

All the wonders of Christ and his Apostles were performed through them by the power of God given to them by the Father.

### XVIII. WINE AT THE MARRIAGE.

When the water was made to appear like wine, as spoken of at the marriage, it was not made into wine, but those who drank of it were so controlled by Christ, through the power given to him by God, that it tasted and appeared to them like wine.

### XIX. PROGRESSIVE STATE OF THE SPIRIT WORLD.

All the spirits of mankind when they come into the Spirit World have a privilege of progressing and becoming holy, wise and happy; but the better life a person lives in the flesh, the more exalted will be his condition when he comes into the Spirit World.

Dear Reader, trust in God, who made all things after the counsel of his own will. The Holy Spirits feel much interest in this work, and the spirits who corrected it desire that the world will receive this correction as coming from them, directed by God himself, which is true.

JESUS, THE CHRIST.

# ST. MATTHEW.

## THE HISTORY OF CHRIST WRITTEN BY MATTHEW,

AS REVISED AND CORRECTED BY THE SPIRIT OF JESUS CHRIST.

### CHAPTER I.

The Wise Men directed to Christ.

**W**HEN Jesus was born in Bethlehem, of Judea, in the days of Herod the King, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod, the King, had heard these things, he was troubled.

4 And when he had gathered some of the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet,

6 And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Judea, art not the least among the princes of Judah: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.

7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, inquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

8 And he sent them to Beth-

lehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.

10 When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.

12 And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt,

and be thou there until I bring thee word : for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt :

15 And was there until the death of Herod : that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son.

16 ¶ Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,

18 In Ramah was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel : for they are dead which sought the young child's life.

21 And he arose and took the young child and his mo-

ther, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither : notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee :

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth : that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

## CHAPTER II.

Preaching of John—Christ baptized.

**I**N those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea.

2 And saying, repent ye, for the King of heaven is at hand.

3 And this is Jesus, who was spoken of by the prophet Isa.

32.1; also, the prophet spoke of John, saying, the voice of one crying in the wilderness, prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. Is. 40.2

4 And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins ; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

5 Then went out to him from Jerusalem, and from all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan.

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation

of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:

9 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees:

10 Therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost,

12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff.

13 ¶ Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

14 But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit from God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:

17 And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAPTER III.

Christ is tempted—Peter and others called.

**T**HEN was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by evil spirits, and he was there forty days.

2 And, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

3 ¶ Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee;

4 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zebulun and Nephthalim:

5 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

6 The land of Zebulun, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles;

7 The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up.

8 ¶ From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent; for the King of heaven is at hand.

9 ¶ And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

10 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

11 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

12 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them.

13 And, they immediately left the boat and their father, and followed him.

14 ¶ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.

15 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with evil spirits, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.

16 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

#### CHAPTER IV.

Christ's sermon on the Mount.

AND seeing the multitudes, he went up on to a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him:

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

3 Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

4 Blessed are they that

mourn, for they shall be comforted.

5 Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth.

6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

8 Blessed are the pure in spirit.

9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

11 Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.

12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid.

15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see



your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of the least of these commandments, and shall teach men to break them, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 ¶ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old times, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment:

22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall bring upon himself trouble:

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee;

24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 Agree with thine adver-

sary quickly, while thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths:

28 But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne;

29 Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King.

30 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

31 But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

32 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth:

33 But I say unto you, That ye resist evil, but only act in defence.

34 Give to them who ask of thee according to circumstances, and your means; and accommodate as far as proper those who would borrow of thee.

35 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt

love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

36 But I say unto you, Love your friends, and hate not your enemies; bless and curse not; do justly unto all, and be governed always by justice and equity.

37 That ye may be the children of your Father who is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

38 Act with justice, and equity, towards all mankind, whether they are your friends or enemies.

39 But if ye do justice to your brethren only, what do ye more than others, do not even the publicans so.

40 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father who is in heaven is perfect.

#### CHAPTER V.

Christ continueth his sermon—speaking of alms—prayer—forgiving our brethren.

**T**AKE heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father who is in heaven.

2 Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:

4 That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father who seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

6 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father who is in secret; and thy Father who seeth in secret will reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth, as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

13 And lead us from temptation, and deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen.

14 For if ye love your neigh-

bours, your heavenly Father will also love you :

15 But if ye love not your neighbours, neither will your Father love you.

16 ¶ Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance : for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, appear not unto men to fast, but unto God, and he will reward thee openly.

#### CHAPTER VI.

Christ speaketh against worldly care and rash judgment.

**J**UDGE not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged ; and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye ?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye ; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye ?

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye ; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

6 ¶ Cast not your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

7 ¶ Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and ye shall find ; knock and it shall be opened unto you :

8 For every one that asketh receiveth ; and he that seeketh findeth ; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone ?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent ?

11 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father who is in heaven, give good things to them that ask him ?

12 ¶ Enter ye in at the strait gate :

13 For wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be who go in thereat :

14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles ?

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit ; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven ; but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name ? and in thy name have cast out evil spirits ? and in thy name done many wonderful works ?

23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you : depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

24 ¶ Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, who built his house upon a rock :

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house ; and it fell not : for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand :

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house ; and it fell : and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine :

29 For he taught them as

one having authority, and not as the scribes.

## CHAPTER VII.

Christ healeth the Centurion's servant.

**W**HEN he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

2 And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

3 And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will ; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man ; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

5 ¶ And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him,

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof ; but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me ; and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth ; and to another, Come, and he cometh ; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he

marvelled, and said to them that followed,

11 Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

12 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way ; and as thou has believed,

13 So be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour.

14 ¶ And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her : and she arose, and ministered unto them.

16 ¶ When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with evil spirits : and he cast them out and healed all that were sick :

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

18 ¶ Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

19 And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests ; but the son of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer

me first to go and bury my father.

22 ¶ And when he was entered into a boat, his disciples followed him.

23 And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea,

24 Insomuch that the boat was covered with the waves : but he was asleep.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us : we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith ? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea ; and there was a great calm.

27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him !

28 ¶ And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with evil spirits, coming out of the tombs, exceedingly fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

29 And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God ? art thou come hither to torment us before the time ?

30 And there was a good way off from them a herd of many swine feeding.

31 So the evil spirits besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were

come out they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told what was befallen to the one possessed of the evil spirits.

34 And, behold, many people came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts

#### CHAPTER VIII.

Christ cureth the palsy—Defendeth his disciples.

**A**ND he entered into a boat, and passed over, and came into his own city.

2 And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; thy disease is healed.

3 Then saith he to the sick of the palsy, Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

4 And he arose, and departed to his house.

5 But when the multitudes saw it, they marvelled,

6 And glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

7 ¶ And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom;

8 And he saith unto him,

Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

9 ¶ And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans,

10 And sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why doth your master eat with publicans and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 For I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth on to an old garment; for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

18 ¶ While he spake these

things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead : but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 ¶ And behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment :

21 For she said within herself If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 And Jesus turned about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort ; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.

23 And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place : for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou Son of David have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men

came to him : and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this ? They said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you,

30 And their eyes were opened ; and Jesus strictly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

32 ¶ As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with an evil spirit.

33 And when the evil spirit was cast out, the dumb spake : and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

34 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.

35 ¶ But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted.

36 And were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few ;

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

## CHAPTER IX.

The Apostles sent forth—Christ comforteth them.

**A**ND when Jesus had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

2 Now the Apostles names are these ; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother ; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother ;

3 Philip, and Bartholomew ; Thomas, and Matthew the publican ; James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus ;

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who betrayed Jesus.

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not :

6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

7 And preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, cast out evil spirits : freely ye have received, freely give.

9 Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses ;

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither two pair of shoes : for the workman is worthy of his meat.

11 And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy ; and there abide till ye go thence.

12 And when ye come into a house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it : but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city.

15 ¶ Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves ; be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

16 But beware of men : for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues ;

17 And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

18 But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak : for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

19 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father who speaketh in you.

20 And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child :

21 And the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake : but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.



23 The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord.

24 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord.

25 If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

26 Fear them not therefore : for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed ; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light : and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the house-tops.

28 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing ? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

29 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

30 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men,

31 Him will I confess also before my Father who is in heaven.

32 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in heaven,

33 And a man's foes are of ten they of his own household.

34 He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me :

35 And he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

36 And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

37 ¶ He that receiveth you receiveth me ; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

38 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward ; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward.

## CHAPTER X.

John's message to Christ -- his testimony of John.

AND it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 And when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another ?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see :

5 The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.

6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see ? A reed shaken with the wind ?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet.

10 For this is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist.

12 ¶ But wherunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

13 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

14 ¶ Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not:—

15 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

19 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.

17 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto hea-

ven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

18 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

19 ¶ At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

20 Even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight.

21 ¶ Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

22 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in spirit: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

23 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

#### CHAPTER XI.

Christ reproveth the Pharisees—the withered hand.

**A**T that time Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were ahungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David

did, when he was ahungred, and they that were with him ;

4 How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests ?

Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless ?

6 And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue :

7 ¶ And, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked him, saying, is it lawful to heal on the sabbath days ? that they might accuse him.

8 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out ?

9 How much then is a man, better than a sheep ? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath days.

10 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it forth ; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

11 ¶ Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him.

12 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence : and great multitudes followed him, and he healed many of them.

13 And charged them that they should not make him known :

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

15 Behold my servant, whom I have chosen ; my beloved, in whom I am well pleased.

16 In his name shall the Gentiles trust.

17 ¶ Then was brought unto him one possessed with an evil spirit, blind, and dumb ; and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

18 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the Son of David ?

19 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow casteth out evil spirits through the power of evil spirits.

20 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation ; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand :

21 And if I by the power of evil spirits cast out evil spirits, by whom do your children cast them out ? therefore they shall be your judges.

22 But if I cast out evil spirits by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

23 Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man ? and then he will spoil his house.

24 He that is not with me is against me ; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.

25 Either make the tree good, and its fruit good ; or else make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt : for the tree is known by its fruit.

26 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things ? for out of the abundance of the mind the mouth speaketh.

27 A good man out of the good treasure of the mind bringeth forth good things : and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things.

28 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

29 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

30 ¶ Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

31 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

32 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

33 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother ? and who are my brethren ?

34 And he said, Behold my mother and my brethren !

#### CHAPTER XII.

Parable of the sower, and the exposition of it.

THE same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a boat, and sat ; and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow ;

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up :

5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth : and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth :

6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched ; and because they had no root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns ; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them :

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some a hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables ?

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the myste-

ries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 Therefore speak I to them in parables : because they seeing see not ; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.

13 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith,

14 By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand ; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive :

15 For the spirit of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed ; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their spirit, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see : and your ears, for they hear.

17 Verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them ; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his spirit. This is he which received seed by the way side.

20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same

is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it.

21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while : for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that hath received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word ; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that receiveth seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it ; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field :

25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field ? from whence then hath it tares ?

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up ?

29 But he said, Nay ; lest while ye gather up the tares,

ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest : and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them : but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field :

32 Which indeed is a very small seed : but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh like a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ Another parable spake he unto them ; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables ;

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables ; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house : and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said unto

them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man ;

38 The field is the world ; the good seed are the children of the kingdom : but the tares are the children of the wicked one ;

39 The enemy that sowed them is the evil spirit ; the harvest is the end of mortality ; and the reapers are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire of truth so shall it be in the end of this dispensation.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels and, they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity ;

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of truth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

44 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field : and when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant-man seeking goodly pearls :

46 Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind :

48 Which when it was full,

they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of this dispensation.

50 And the world shall be tryed by the word of truth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then he said unto them, Therefore every scribe, which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is a householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, inso-much that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethern, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet hath not honour, in his own country, and in his own house.

58 And he did not many

mighty works there because of their unbelief.

### CHAPTER XIII.

Herod's opinion of Christ—John the Baptist beheaded.

**A**T that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,

2 And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

3 ¶ For Herod had laid hold on John and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife.

4 For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

6 But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she would ask.

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John the Baptist's head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it be given her.

10 And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the

damsel : and she brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

13 ¶ When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by boat into a desert place apart : and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

15 ¶ And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past ; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart ; give ye them to eat.

17 And they say unto him, We have heard but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat and were satisfied ; and they took up of the fragments that remained.

21 And they that had eaten were about five hundred men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a boat, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up on to a mountain apart to pray : and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But the boat was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves : for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit ; and they cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer ; it is I ; be not afraid.

28 And when he was come into the boat, the wind ceased.

29 Then they that were in the boat came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

30 ¶ And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

31 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased ;

32 And besought him that they might only touch the hem of his garment ; and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.



CHAPTER XIV.

Christ reproveth the Scribes and Pharisees.

**T**HEN came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, it is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me;

6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying,

8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their spirit is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

10 ¶ And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand:

11 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were

offended, after they heard this saying?

12 But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

13 Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

14 ¶ Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

15 And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O, Lord, thou Son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with an evil spirit.

16 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us.

17 But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

18 Then she came and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

19 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt.

20 And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

21 And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee;

22 And went up on to a mountain, and sat down there.

23 And great multitudes came unto him, having with them

those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and sat them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them.

24 Inasmuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed made whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see; and they glorified the God of Israel.

25 ¶ Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they have continued with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

26 And his disciples say unto him, From whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to feed so great a multitude?

27 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

28 And they did all eat, and were satisfied: and they took up of the broken that was left.

29 And they that did eat were four hundred men, beside women and children.

30 And he sent away the multitude, and took a boat and came into the coasts of Magdala.

#### CHAPTER XV.

The Pharisees seek a sign—The disciples are warned.

**T**HE Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto

them, When it is evening, ye say, it will be fair weather: for the sky is red.

3 And in the morning, it will be foul weather to day: for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread?

9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves and the five hundred?

10 Neither the seven loaves of the four hundred?

11 How is it that ye do not understand that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?

12 Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread,

but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am?

14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist; some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father who is in heaven.

18 I will build a church that shall not be destroyed.

19 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

20 ¶ From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

21 Then Peter began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

22 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

24 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own life? or what shall a man give in exchange for his life?

25 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels.

#### CHAPTER XVI.

The transfiguration of Christ—He healeth the lunatic.

AND after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up on to a high mountain apart,

2 And was transfigured before them; and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them:

5 And behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus char-

ged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man is risen from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why do the scribes say that Elias must first come?

11 I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed.

12 Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 His disciples did not understand of whom he spake.

14 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying,

15 Lord, have mercy on my son; for he is a lunatic, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the evil spirit; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, if ye had faith as a grain of mus-

tard seed, ye could have cast him out.

21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men.

23 And they shall crucify him, and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute money came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then the children are free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

#### CHAPTER XVII.

Christ warns his disciples to be humble and harmless.

**T**HE disciples said to Jesus, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me.

6 But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones;

8 For the Son of man is come to save sinners.

9 Even so it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

10 ¶ Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

11 But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

12 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church:

13 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord,

14 How oft shall my brother sin against me, and I love him? till seven times?

15 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, until seven times: but, until seventy times seven.

16 ¶ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

17 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents.

18 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

19 The servant therefore fell down at his feet, saying, Lord, have patience with me and I will pay thee all.

20 Then the Lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and let him go.

21 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him a hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

22 And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

23 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

24 So when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

25 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I did as thou desiredst me :

26 Shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?

27 And his lord was displeased, and delivered him to prison, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

28 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye have not compassion upon your fellow creatures.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Christ healeth the sick—how to treat an offending brother.

**A**ND it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea beyond Jordan;

2 And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female,

5 And said, for this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to

his wife: and they twain shall be as one flesh? What therefore God hath joined together let not man put asunder.

6 Congenial spirits are such as God joins together as man and wife, and such must not be put asunder.

7 ¶ Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray :

8 And the disciples rebuked them.

9 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, to come unto me, and forbid them not ;

10 For of such is the kingdom of heaven.

11 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

12 ¶ And behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?

13 And he said unto him. Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments,

14 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, thou shalt do no murder, thou shalt not commit adultery, thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

15 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

16 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

17 Jesus said unto him, If

thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven : and come and follow me.

18 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful : for he had great possessions.

19 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that it is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven, which is righteousness joy and peace.

20 And again I say unto you, it is easier for a camel to go through the needle's eye than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved ?

22 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee ; what shall we have therefore ?

23 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall be with me.

24 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive a hundred fold.

#### CHAPTER XIX.

Christ foretelleth his death—He healeth the blind.

AND Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve

disciples apart by the way, and said unto them,

2 Behold we go up to Jerusalem ; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and scribes, and they shall condemn him to death.

3 And shall deliver him to the people to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him : and the third day he shall rise again.

4 ¶ Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.

5 And he said unto her, What wilt thou ? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom.

6 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I drink of and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with ? They say unto him, We are able.

7 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with : but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared by my Father

8 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

9 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know

that 'the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

10 But it shall not be so among you : but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister ;

11 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant :

12 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister.

13 And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

14 ¶ And, behold, two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of David.

15 And the multitude rebuked them, because they did not hold their peace : but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of David.

16 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you ?

17 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

18 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes : and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

#### CHAPTER XX.

Christ enters Jerusalem—putteth to silence the priests and elders.

**A**ND when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the

mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find a colt tied : loose him, and bring him unto me.

3 And if any man say aught unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of him ; and straightway he will send him.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 Tell ye the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon a colt.

6 And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them.

7 And brought the colt, and put on him their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments by the way ; others cut down branches from the trees, and strewed them by the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David ; Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord ; Hosanna in the highest.

10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, the city was moved, saying, Who is this ?

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast



out all of them that sold and bought in the temple,

13 And said unto them, it is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer.

14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them.

15 And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased,

16 And said unto him, Heardest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany; and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning, as he returned into the city, he hungered.

19 And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away!

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, if ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but greater things shall ye do.

22 And every thing which is

consistent with God's will, that ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

23 ¶ And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I likewise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

25 The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, from heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

26 But if we shall say, of men; we fear the people; for the most of them hold John as a prophet.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

28 ¶ But what think ye? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not; but afterwards he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir; and went not.

31 Whether of them twain

did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.

32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterwards, that ye might believe him.

33 ¶ Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen,

34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

40 When the lord therefore

of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the Scriptures, the stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

43 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

44 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

#### CHAPTER XXI.

The parable of the marriage—The Sadducees confuted.

AND Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

2 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to

his farm, another to his merchandise :

6 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

7 Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

8 So those servants went out into the highways, and did as they were commanded.

9 ¶ And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment :

10 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.

11 Then said the king to the servants, Take him away.

12 ¶ Then went the Pharisees, and took council how they might entangle him in his talk.

13 And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying,

14 Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man : for thou regardest not the person of men.

15 Tell us therefore, what thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?

16 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said,

17 Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

18 Shew me the tribute money.

19 And they brought unto him a penny.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription?

21 They say unto him, Cesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar the things which are Cesar's; and unto God the things that are God's.

22 When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ The same day came to him the Sadducees, who say that there is no resurrection, and asked him.

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, if a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

25 Now there were with us seven brethren : and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother :

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the spirit, nor the power of God; for in the spirit life they are united only by congeniality.

30 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

31 ¶ But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

32 Then one of them, who was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

33 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?

34 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

35 This is the first and great commandment.

36 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

37 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

38 ¶ While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

39 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, The son of David.

40 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

41 The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

42 And no man was able to answer him a word.

#### CHAPTER XXII.

The Scribes and Pharisees reproved.

**T**HEN spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples.

2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.

4 For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders: but they themselves will not stir a finger to move them.

5 But all their works they do for to be seen of men; they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

6 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.

9 And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased;

10 And he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

11 ¶ But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!

12 For ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. The kingdom of heaven is righteousness, joy and peace.

13 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses,

14 And for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye

ST. MATTHEW—CHAPTER XXIII.

shall receive the greater condemnation.

15 Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing ;

16 But whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor !

17 Ye fools and blind : for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold ?

18 And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar it is nothing ; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

19 Ye fools and blind : for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift ?

20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law : judgment, mercy, and truth.

23 These ought ye to have done, and not leave the other undone.

24 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !

25 For ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is

within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill not ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings and ye would not.

34 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

CHAPTER XXIII.

The guilt of Jerusalem—it destruction foretold.

AND Jesus went out, and departed from the temple : and his disciples came to him

for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 ¶ And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.

9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill some of you: and ye shall be hated for my name's sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure

unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place.

15 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains:

16 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time.

17 ¶ Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

18 And he shall send his angels as with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his children from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

19 Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch be yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh:

20 ¶ Watch therefore; for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

21 Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?

22 Blessed is that servant whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

#### CHAPTER XXIV.

The parable of the ten virgins, and of the talents.

**T**HEN shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto

ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

3 They that were foolish took their lamps filled, and took no oil besides with them :

4 But the wise took oil with them in other vessels, besides in their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh ; go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil ; for our lamps are gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so ; lest there be not enough for us and you ; but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came ; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage : and the door was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13 ¶ For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

14 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two,

and to another one ; to every man according to his several ability ; and straightway took his journey.

15 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

16 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

17 But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

18 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

19 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliverest unto me five talents : behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.

20 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant : thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things : enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

21 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord thou deliverest unto me two talents : behold, I have gained two other talents beside them.

22 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant ; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things : enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

23 Then he which had received the one talent came and

ST. MATTHEW—CHAPTER XXV.

said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed :

24 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth : lo, there thou hast that is thine.

25 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed :

26 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

CHAPTER XXV.

The rulers conspire against Christ—  
He eateth the passover.

AND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

2 Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is to be betrayed to be crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

6 ¶ Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste ?

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman ? for she had wrought a good work upon me.

11 For ye have the poor always with you ; but me ye have not always.

12 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, what this woman hath done, shall be told for a memorial of her.

13 ¶ Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests,

14 And said unto them, What will ye give me, if I will deliver him unto you ?

15 And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

17 ¶ Now on the first day of the feast of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover ?

18 And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say



unto him, The Master saith, my time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the passover.

20 Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve.

21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you will betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

23 And he answered and said, He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same will betray me.

24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed!

25 Then Judas, who betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat this in remembrance of me.

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it in remembrance of me.

28 But I say unto you, I will not drink with you henceforth of the fruit of the vine, until that day when I shall drink a new kind of wine with you in my Father's kingdom.

29 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

30 But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

31 Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet I will never be offered.

32 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou wilt deny me thrice.

33 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all his disciples.

34 ¶ Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

35 And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.

36 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.

37 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

38 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

39 ¶ And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

40 Now he that betrayed

him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; hold him fast.

41 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Master; and kissed him.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

43 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he would give immediately a host of angels who would protect me.

44 But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

45 In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me. Then most of the disciples forsook him, and fled.

46 ¶ And they that had laid hold on Jesus led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

47 But Peter followed him afar off unto the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end.

48 Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death:

49 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

50 And said, this fellow said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

51 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?

52 But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.

53 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming as a cloud of heaven, to overshadow the earth with his glory.

54 Then the high priest said, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

55 What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

56 Then did they buffet him, and smite him,

57 Saying, Prophecy who was it that smote thee?

58 ¶ Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a woman came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

59 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not the man.

60 And when he was gone out into the porch, another woman saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.

61 And again he denied, I do not know the man.

62 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou art also one of them ; for thy speech betrayeth thee.

63 Then again he said, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.

64 And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out and wept bitterly.

#### CHAPTER XXVI.

Christ is delivered bound to Pilate—  
He is condemned and crucified.

**W**HEN the morning was come, the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death :

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

3 ¶ Then Judas, who had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us ? see thou to that.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed.

6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It

is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they took council, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day.

9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value ;

10 And gave them for the potter's field, as the prophet foretold.

11 And Jesus stood before the governor : and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews ? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee ?

14 And he answered to him never a word ; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

15 Now at that feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that

I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus who is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him

19 ¶ When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man : for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

20 But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus who is called Christ? They say unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governor said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

34 ¶ When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person : see ye to it.

25 Then answered the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then released he Barabbas unto them : and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

27 Then the soldiers of the

governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers.

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand : and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!

30 And they took the reed, and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify him.

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name : him they compelled to bear his cross.

33 ¶ And when they were come unto a place called Calvary where they crucified him,

34 They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall : and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots : that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

36 And sitting down they watched him there ;

37 And set up over his head his accusation written, JESUS OF NAZARETH, KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were there two who were taken for thieves and crucified with him ; one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said,

42 He saved others ; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.

43 He trusted in God ; let him deliver him now, if he will have him : for he said, I am the Son of God.

44 One of those who were crucified with him, mocked the same as the priests.

45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani ? that is to say, My God, my God, why am I forsaken ?

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and

put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.

49 The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

50 Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost, meaning his spirit.

51 And, behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom ; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent ;

52 Now when the Centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

53 And many women were there beholding, who followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him :

54 Among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

55 When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple :

56 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

57 And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

58 And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock : and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

59 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

60 ¶ Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

61 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

62 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.

63 Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make it as sure as ye can.

64 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

#### CHAPTER XXVII.

Christ's resurrection—He appeareth to his disciples.

**I**N the end of the Sabbath, as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

2 And, behold, there was a great earthquake: and the angel of God descended from heaven and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow:

4 And for fear of him the

keepers did shake, and become as dead men.

5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, who was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre with fear and great joy; and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught; and this saying is commonly

reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying,

17 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father,

and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit :

17 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you : and, lo, I am with you. Amen.

## ST. MARK.

### THE HISTORY OF JESUS CHRIST WRITTEN BY MARK,

AS REVISED AND CORRECTED BY THE SPIRIT OF JESUS CHRIST.

#### CHAPTER I.

Jesus is baptized, and tempted.

**T**HE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God ;

2 As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face who shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance.

5 And there went out unto him from the land of Judea, and from Jerusalem, and were baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his lions ; and he did eat locusts and wild honey ;

7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier

than I after me, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water : but he shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit.

9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him :

11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

12 And immediately the spirits lead him into the wilderness.

13 And he was there in the wilderness forty days tempted of evil spirits ; and was with the wild beasts ; and the angels ministered unto him.

14 Now after that John was

put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of heaven,

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the King of heaven is at hand; repent ye, and believe the gospel.

16 Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers.

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the boat mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went after him.

21 And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught

22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

23 And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us?

I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

29 And forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever; and they told him of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.

32 And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him them that were diseased, and them that were possessed with evil spirits.

33 And many of the city was gathered together at the door.

34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many evil spirits; and suffered them not to speak, because they knew him.



35 And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon and they that were with him followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next town, that I may preach there also : for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out evil spirits.

40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will ; be thou clean.

42 And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he strictly charged him, and forthwith sent him away ;

44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man : but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

45 But he went out, and began to publish it much, and

to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places : and they came to him from every quarter.

## CHAPTER II.

Christ healeth the paralytic—Mathew called.

AND again he entered into Capernaum after some days ; and it was noised that he was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered together insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no, not so much as about the door : and he preached the word unto them.

3 And they came unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy, who was borne of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for the press, they uncovered the roof where he was : and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Thou art healed.

6 Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way unto thine house.

7 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all ; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

8 And he went forth again by the seaside ; and the mul-

titude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

9 And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me And he arose and followed him.

10 And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples; for there were many, and they followed him.

11 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners?

12 When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of a physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous; but sinners to repentance.

13 And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees used to fast: and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

14 And Jesus said unto them, Will the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they will not fast.

15 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and

then shall they fast in those days.

16 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but the new wine must be put into new bottles.

17 And it came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath day; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn.

18 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful?

19 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was ahungered, he, and they that were with him?

20 How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

21 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

### CHAPTER III.

Christ healeth the withered hand, and many other infirmities.

AND he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there who had a withered hand.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him

on the sabbath day ; that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto the man who had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath day?

5 And when he had looked round about on them with pity, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out : and his hand was restored whole as the other.

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea : and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,

8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan ; and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small boat should wait on him because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many ; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before

him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

12 And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known.

13 And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would : and they came unto him.

14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach,

15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out evil spirits :

16 And Simon who is surnamed Peter ;

17 And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James ; and he surnamed them Boanerges ;

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed Jesus : and they went into a house.

20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.

21 And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him : for they said, He is beside himself.

22 ¶ And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, He hath an evil spirit and by the power of the evil spirits casteth he out evil spirits.

23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in

parables, How can an evil spirit cast out an evil spirit?

24 If a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand.

25 And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.

26 No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house.

27 ¶ There came then his brethren and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

28 And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.

29 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

30 And he looked round about on them who sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

31 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

#### CHAPTER IV.

Parable of the sower—We must communicate our knowledge to others.

AND he began again to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a boat, and sat in the sea; and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them,

3 Hearken! behold, there went out a sower to sow:

4 And it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the wayside, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth:

6 But when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased; and brought forth, some thirty, and, some sixty, and some a hundred fold.

9 And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And when the multitude was gone, they that were about him with the twelve asked of him the parable.

11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of heaven: but unto them who are our opposers, these things are said in parables:

12 That hearing they may hear, and not understand.

13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable?

and how then will ye know all parables ?

14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the wayside, where the word is sown ; but when they have heard an evil spirit cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their spirits.

16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground ; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness ;

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time : afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake immediately they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sown among thorns ; such as hear the word,

19 And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

20 And these are they which are sown on good ground ; such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundredfold.

21 ¶ And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed ? and not to be set on a candlestick ?

22 For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested ; neither was anything kept se-

cret, but that it shall come to light.

23 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear. With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you ; and unto you that hear shall more be given.

25 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground ;

26 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

27 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself ;

28 First the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.

29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

30 ¶ And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of heaven ? or with what comparison shall we compare it ?

31 It is like a grain of mustard seed, sown in the earth, which is a small seed :

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh a large herb, and shooteth out great branches ; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

33 And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear it.

34 And when they were

alone, he expounded the parables to his disciples.

35 And the same day, when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the boat. And there were also with him other little boats.

37 And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the boat, so that it was nearly full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the boat, asleep on a pillow : and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish ?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful ? how is it that ye have no faith ?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him ?

#### CHAPTER V.

Christ casteth out evil spirits—He raiseth Jairus' daughter.

**A**ND they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he was come out of the boat, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs ; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains :

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces : neither could any man tame him.

5 And night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God ? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.

9 And he asked him, What is thy name ? And he answered, saying, Our names are Legion, for we are many.

10 And they besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding.

12 And all the spirits besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine : and the herd ran violently down a steep

place into the sea, and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the evil spirits, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind; and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the evil spirits and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when he was come into the boat, he that had been possessed with the evil spirits prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him: and the people marveled.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by boat unto the other side, much people gathered unto him; and he was nigh unto the sea.

22 And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name;

and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live.

24 And Jesus went with him; and much people followed him, and thronged him.

24 And a certain woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years,

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, she came in the press behind, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned himself about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what

was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's house certain who said, Thy daughter is dead; why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth she was in a trance state.

40 And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying.

41 And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, (I say unto thee,) arise.

42 And straightway the dam-

sel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment,

43 And he charged them straitly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

#### CHAPTER VI.

The Apostles—Divers opinions of Christ.

AND he went out from thence and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him.

2 And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Judas, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

4 But Jesus said unto him, A prophet is without honour among his own kin, and in his own house.

5 And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folks, and healed them.

6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching.



7 ¶ And he called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two ; and gave them power over unclean spirits ;

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only ; no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse :

9 But be shod with sandals ; and not put on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into a house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many evil spirits, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

14 And king Herod heard of him ; (for his name was spread abroad ; ) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John,

whom I beheaded : he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife ; for he had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him ; but she could not :

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and a holy, and observed him ; and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chiefs of Galilee ;

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And he sware unto her. Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask ? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that

thou give me by and by in a charger the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sorry ; yet for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought : and he went and beheaded him in prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel ; and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.

30 And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while : for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

32 And they departed into a desert place by boat privately.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

34 And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shep-

herd : and he began to teach them many things.

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed :

36 Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread : for they have nothing to eat.

37 He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat ?

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye ? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed and brake the loaves and gave them to his disciples to set before them ; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat, and were satisfied.

43 And they that did eat of the loaves were about five hundred men.

44 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the boat, and to go to the other side before unto Beth-

saida, while he sent away the people.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 And when even was come, the boat was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing; for the wind was contrary unto them: and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and he made as though he would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out:

50 For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the boat; and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

52. For they considered not of the loaves; for their heart was hardened.

53 And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the boat, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds

those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were made whole.

## CHAPTER VII.

The Pharisees reprov'd—Christ feedeth many.

**T**HEN came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, who came from Jerusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with unwashed hands, they found fault.

3 For the most of the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from their labour, except they wash, they eat not.

5 And many other things there are which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brazen vessels, and of tables.

6 For ye lay aside the commandment of God, and hold the traditions of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

7 And ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

8 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother;

9 And, Whoso curseth father

or mother, let him die the death :

10 But ye say, If a child shall say to his father or mother, Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me : he shall be free.

11 And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or his mother ;

12 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition ;

13 Which ye have delivered : and many such like things do ye.

14 ¶ And from thence Christ arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon ;

15 And entered into a house, and would have no man know it : but he could not be hid.

16 For a certain woman, whose daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet :

17 And besought him that he would cast forth the evil spirit out of her daughter.

18 And he said unto her, Go thy way ;

19 The evil spirit is gone out of thy daughter.

20 And when she was come to her house, she found the evil spirit had gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

21 ¶ And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee.

22 And they brought unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his

speech ; and they besought him to put his hand upon him.

23 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue ;

24 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and said, Ephphatha, that is, be opened.

25 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

26 And he charged them that they should tell no one : but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it ;

27 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well : he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

#### CHAPTER VIII.

A multitude fed—The Pharisees seek a sign.

**I**N those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have had nothing to eat :

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way : for divers of them came from far.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these men with bread here in the wilderness ?

5 And he asked them, How

many loaves have ye? and they said, seven.

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them; and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eat, and were satisfied: and they took up of the broken that was left.

9 And they that had eaten were about four hundred, besides women and children: and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entered into a boat with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith. Why doth this generation seek after a sign? verily I say unto you, there shall no sign be given unto this generation.

13 And he left them, and entering into the boat again departed to the other side.

14 ¶ Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the boat with them more than one loaf.

15 And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them,

16 Why reason ye, because

ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand?

17 Have ye your spirits yet hardened?

18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the five loaves among five hundred.

20 And the seven among four hundred, how many fragments took ye up?

21 And he said unto them, Why do ye not understand?

22 ¶ And when he came to Bethsaida, they brought a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

23 And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw aught.

24 And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up; and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

27 ¶ And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cesarea Philippi; and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say,

Elias ; and others, One of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am ? And Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter began to rebuke him.

33 But when Christ had turned about and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

35 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his life by it ?

36 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his life ?

37 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

## CHAPTER IX.

The transfiguration of Christ — He casteth out a dumb and deaf spirit.

AND after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into a high mountain apart by themselves :

2 And he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow ; so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses : and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them : and a voice came out of the cloud, saying,

6 This is my beloved Son : hear him.

7 And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

8 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

9 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

10 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes that Elias must first come ?

11 And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first ;

12 And how it is written of the Son of man, that he

must suffer many things, and be set at naught.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What question ye with them?

17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit;

18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him; and he foameth and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answereth them, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me?

20 And they brought him unto Jesus: and when he saw him straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 Jesus asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

22 And oftentimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do anything, have

compassion on us and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, it is possible.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the evil spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked Jesus privately, Why could we not cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, the spirit shall come forth from the body in the resurrection state.

32 But they understood not

that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

33 ¶ And he came to Capernaum : and being in the house he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way ?

34 But they held their peace : for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who should be the greatest.

35 And he sat down, and called the twelve, and said unto them, If any man desire to be the first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them : and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive such a child in my name, receiveth me ; and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

38 ¶ And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out evil spirits in thy name, and he followeth not us ; and we forbade him, because he followed not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not : for there is no man who shall cast out evil spirits in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us is on our part.

41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

32 And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones

that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

## CHAPTER X.

Christ disputeth with the Pharisees concerning divorce.

AND he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea by the farther side of Jordan : and the people resort unto him again ; and, as he was wont he taught them again.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife ? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you ?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife ;

8 And they twain shall be as one flesh : so then they are no more twain, but as one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joined together, let no man put asunder.

10 ¶ And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.



11 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them. Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not; for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

12 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

13 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him,

14 And asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

15 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God.

16 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

17 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

18 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him,

19 One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

20 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

21 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his dis-

ciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of heaven!

22 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard it is for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of heaven!

23 It is easier for a camel to go through the needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

24 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

25 ¶ Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

26 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's,

27 But he shall receive a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions;

28 And in the world to come a greater blessing.

29 But many that are first shall be last; and the last first.

30 ¶ And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them: and they were amazed; and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell

them what things should happen unto him,

31 Saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests; and unto the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles:

32 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall kill him; and the third day he shall rise again.

33 ¶ And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall desire.

34 And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?

35 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

36 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?

37 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized:

38 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but it shall be given to them by whom it is prepared.

39 And when the ten heard

it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

40 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them: and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

41 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

42 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

43 For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister.

44 ¶ And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the highway side begging.

45 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

46 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

47 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee.

48 And he rose, and came to Jesus.

49 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee?

The blind man said unto him, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way ; thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

## CHAPTER XL

Christ's entry into Jerusalem.

**A**ND when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, Jesus sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you : and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat ; loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this ? say ye that the Lord hath need of him ; and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without in a place where two ways met ; and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there said unto them, Why do ye loose the colt ?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded : and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him ; and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments by the way ; and

others cut down branches off the trees, and strewed them by the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna ; Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord :

10 Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord : Hosanna in the highest.

11 And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple : and when he had looked round about upon all things, the eventide having come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry :

13 And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon : and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves ;

14 And Jesus said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ And they came to Jerusalem : and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple ;

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called the house of prayer ? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

18 And the scribes and chief

priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because the people were astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou condemned is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God; and whosoever shall not doubt in his mind, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith, if consistent with God's will.

23 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them, if they are consistent.

24 And when ye stand praying, love, if ye have aught against any;

25 That your Father also who is in heaven may love you.

26 But if ye do not love, neither will your Father who is in heaven love you.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders,

28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

30 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, from heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?

32 But if we shall say, of men; they feared the people: for the most of people counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

## CHAPTER XII.

Christ foretells the reprobation of the Jews—The calling of the Gentiles.

**A**ND he began to speak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a place for the winefat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him, and

beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one son, his well beloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying they will reverence my son.

7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 And have ye not read this scripture: The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner:

11 This was the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people; for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of

the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man; for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

14 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see it.

16 And they brought it. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cesar's.

17 And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cesar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him.

18 ¶ Then come unto him the Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying,

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, if a man's brother die, and leave his wife, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her,

and had no seed : last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them ? for the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answering said unto them, Ye do err, because ye know not the spirit, neither the power of God ?

25 In the spirit life they are united only by congeniality as man and wife.

26 And as touching the dead bodies, they rise not : have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying,

27 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob ?

28 ¶ And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all ?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel ; The Lord our God is one Lord :

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength : this is the first commandment.

31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.

32 And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast

said the truth ; for there is one God ; and there is none other but him.

33 And to love him with all the spirit, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

35 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market-places,

36 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts :

37 Who devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers : these shall receive greater condemnation.

38 ¶ And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury : and many that were rich cast in much.

39 And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

40 And he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more, in proportion to her means, than all they which have cast into the treasury :

41 For all they did cast in

of their abundance ; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

## CHAPTER XIII.

Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple—The gospel must be preached to all nations.

**A**ND as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here!

2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately,

4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus answering them began to say, Take heed lest any deceive you:

6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am; and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled:

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines and troubles; these are the beginnings of sorrows.

9 ¶ But take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver

you up to councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake.

10 But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate:

11 But whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Spirit.

12 And ye shall be hated for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

13 ¶ But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not,

14 (Let him that readeth understand,) then let them that be in Judea flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is in the field not turn back again for to take up his garment.

16 ¶ But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

17 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

18 ¶ But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels who are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

19 Take ye heed, watch and pray:

20 For the time is as a man taking a far journey, who left

his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

21 Watch ye therefore : for ye know not when the time cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning :

22 Lest coming suddenly they find you sleeping.

23 And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

#### CHAPTER XIV.

A conspiracy against Christ—Judas betrayeth him with a kiss.

**A**FTER two days was the feast of the passover, and of unleavened bread : and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take Jesus by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

3 ¶ And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard very precious ; and she opened the box, and poured it on his head.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made ?

5 For it might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

6 And Jesus said, Let her alone ; why trouble ye her ?

she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good : but me ye have not always.

8 She hath done what she could : she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

10 ¶ And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

12 ¶ And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passover ?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water : follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, where is the guest-chamber where I shall eat the passover with my disciples ?

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished



and prepared : there make ready for us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them : and they made ready the passover.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 And as they sat and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, one of you who eateth with me will betray me.

19 And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I ? and another said, Is it I ?

20 And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him : but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed ! good were it for that man if he had never been born.

22 ¶ And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

23 And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night : for it is written, I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

24 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

25 But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

26 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

27 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in anywise. Likewise also said they all.

28 ¶ And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders.

29 And he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he ; take him, and lead him away safely.

30 And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, Master ; and kissed him.

31 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

32 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and with staves to take me ?

33 I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not : but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.

34 And some of his disciples forsook him, and fled.

35 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth east about his naked body ; and the young men laid hold on him :

36 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

37 ¶ And they led Jesus away to the high priest :

38 And with him were assembled the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.

39 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest : and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

40 And the chief priests and all the council sought for witness against Jesus to put him to death ; and found none.

41 For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.

42 And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying,

43 We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.

44 But neither did their witness agree together.

45 And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing ? what is it which these witness against thee ?

46 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed ?

47 And Jesus said, I am : and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming as a cloud of heaven, to overshadow the earth with his glory.

48 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses ?

49 Ye have heard the blasphemy : what think ye ? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

50 And some began to say unto him, Prophecy : and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

51 ¶ And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh a woman :

52 And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

53 But he denied, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch ; and the cock crew.

54 And another saw him, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

55 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter. Surely thou art one of them : for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

56 But he said, I know not this man of whom ye speak.

57 And the second time the cock crew. And Peter called to mind the word that Jesus said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou wilt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

#### CHAPTER XV.

Christ brought before Pilate, and crucified.

AND straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art

ST. MARK—CHAP. XV.

thou the King of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things; but he answered nothing.

4 And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witness against thee.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, who lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

10 For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy.

11 But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the King of the Jews?

13 And they cried out again, Crucify him.

14 Then Pilate said unto

them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucify him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the soldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium; and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,

18 And began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews!

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him.

21 And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.

22 And they bring him unto Calvary.

23 And they gave him vinegar to drink:

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written

over, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 And with him they crucify two supposed to be thieves ; the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

29 And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days,

30 Save thyself, and come down from the cross.

31 Likewise also the chief priests mocking said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others ; himself he cannot save.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe. And one of them who was crucified with him reviled him.

33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour.

34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani ? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone ;

let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the spirit.

38 And the vail of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom.

39 ¶ And when the centurion, who stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 There were also women looking on, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome ;

41 Who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him ; and many other women who came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42 ¶ And now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath,

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, who also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead : and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was

hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses beheld where he was laid.

## CHAPTER XVI.

The resurrection of Christ—He sendeth forth the apostles to preach the Gospel.

**A**ND when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great.

5 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter that he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

8 And they went out quickly,

and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any; for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast evil spirits.

10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

12 ¶ After that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

13 And they went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them.

14 ¶ Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them who had seen him after he was risen.

15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel.

16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be condemned.

17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; in my name shall they cast out evil spirits; they shall speak with new tongues;

18 They shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

## ST. LUKE.

### THE HISTORY OF JESUS CHRIST WRITTEN BY LUKE,

AS REVISED AND CORRECTED BY THE SPIRIT OF JESUS CHRIST.

#### CHAPTER I

An angel foretelleth the birth of John  
—The prophecy of Zacharias.

**F**ORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, who from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word ;

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

5 **T**HERE was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia : and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

7 And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren ; and they both were now well stricken in years.

8 And it came to pass, that,

while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias : for thy prayer is heard ; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness ; and many shall rejoice at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink ; and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb.

16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of

## ST. LUKE—CHAP. I.

the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just ; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this ? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God : and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them : and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple ; for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

23 And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

24 And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be de-

livered ; and she brought forth a son.

27 And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her ; and they rejoiced with her.

28 And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child ; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

29 And his mother answered and said, Not so ; but he shall be called John.

30 And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. .

31 And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called.

32 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.

33 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

34 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them : and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judea.

35 And all they that heard them laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be ! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

36 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying,

37 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel ; for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

38 And hath raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David ;

39 As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, who have been since the world began :

40 To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant ;

41 The promise which he made to our father Abraham,

42 That he would grant unto us, that we, being delivered out of the hand of our enemies, might serve him without fear,

43 In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.

44 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

## CHAPTER II.

The nativity of Christ—An angel relates his birth to the shepherds.

**A**ND it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

2 And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.

3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and lineage of David,)

5 To be taxed with Mary

his espoused wife, being great with child.

6 And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered.

7 And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger ; because there was no room for them in the inn.

8 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

9 And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them ; and they were sore afraid.

10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not : for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.

11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, Christ Jesus the Mediator.

12 And this shall be a sign unto you : ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

15 And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing



which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

16 And they came with haste and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.

18 And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her mind.

20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

21 And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcision of the child, his name was called JESUS,

22 And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord ;

23 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.

24 And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem whose name was Simeon ; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel ; and the Holy Spirit was upon him.

25 And it was revealed unto

him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death before he had seen the Lord's Christ,

26 And he came by the Spirit into the temple : and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law.

27 Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,

28 Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word :

29 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,

30 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people ;

31 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

32 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.

33 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary, his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel ; and for a sign which shall be spoken against ;

34 (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also ;) that the thoughts of many spirits may be revealed.

35 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser : she was of a great age, and had lived with a husband seven years from her virginity ;

36 And she was a widow of about fourscore and four years, who departed not from

the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.

37 And she, coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

38 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

39 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

40 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover.

41 And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast.

42 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it.

43 But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

44 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

45 And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them and asking them questions.

46 And all that heard him

were astonished at his understanding and answers.

47 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.

48 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?

49 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

50 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

51 And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man.

### CHAPTER III.

Christ, being baptized, receiveth testimony from Heaven.

**N**OW in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar. Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanius the tetrarch of Abylene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zecharias in the wilderness.

3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance.

4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, The voice

of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight

5 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him,

6 O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

7 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves,

8 We have Abraham to our father :

9 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees ; every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, what shall we do then ?

11 He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none : and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

12 Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master what shall we do ?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you.

14 And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do ? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man ; neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 And as the people were

in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not ;

16 John answered, saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water ; but one mightier than I cometh, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear ; he shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit, and with truth :

17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner ;

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reprov'd by him for Herodias, his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

20 Added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

21 Now when the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened,

22 And the Holy Spirit descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven which said, Thou art my beloved Son ; in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus was about thirty years of age, who was the son of Joseph, who was the son of Heli,

24 Who was the son of Matthat, who was the son of Levi, who was the son of

Milchi, who was the son of Janna, who was the son of Joseph,

25 Who was the son of Mattathias, who was the son of Amos, who was the son of Naum, who was the son of Esli, who was the son of Nagge,

26 Who was the son of Maath, who was the son of Mattathias, who was the son of Semei, who was the son of Joseph, who was the son of Judah,

27 Who was the son of Joanna, who was the son of Rhesa, who was the son of Zorobabel, who was the son of Salathiel, who was the son of Neri,

28 Who was the son of Melchi, who was the son of Addi, who was the son of Cosam, who was the son of Elmodam, who was the son of Er,

29 Who was the son of Jose, who was the son of Eliezer, who was the son of Jorim, who was the son of Matthat, who was the son of Levi,

30 Who was the son of Simeon, who was the son of Judah, who was the son of Joseph, who was the son of Jonan, who was the son of Eliakim,

31 Who was the son of Melca, who was the son of Menan, who was the son of Mattatha, who was the son of Nathan, who was the son of David,

32 Who was the son of

Jesse, who was the son of Obed, who was the son of Booz, who was the son of Salmon, who was the son of Naasson,

33 Who was the son of Aminadab, who was the son of Aram, who was the son of Esrom, who was the son of Phares, who was the son of Judah,

34 Who was the son of Jacob, who was the son of Isaac, who was the son of Abraham, who was the son of Thara, who was the son of Nachor,

35 Who was the son of Saruch, who was the son of Ragan, who was the son of Phalec, who was the son of Heber, who was the son of Sala,

36 Who was the son of Cainan, who was the son of Arphaxad, who was the son of Sem, who was the son of Noah, who was the son of Lamech,

37 Who was the son of Mathusala, who was the son of Enoch, who was the son of Jared, who was the son of Maleleel, who was the son of Cainan,

38 Who was the son of Enos, who was the son of Seth, who was the son of Adam.

#### CHAPTER IV.

The fasting and temptation of Christ.  
He beginneth to preach.

**A**ND Jesus was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, and he was there forty days, tempted of evil spirits,

and the angels ministered unto him.

2 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about,

3 And he taught in their synagogues.

4 ¶ And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up :

5 And, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.

6 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

7 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor ; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bound,

8 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

9 And he closed the book, and sat down.

10 And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

11 And all bear him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son ?

12 And he said unto them,

Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself : whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country.

13 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.

14 But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land ;

15 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

16 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet ; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

17 And many of them in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

18 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong.

19 But he, passing through the midst of them, went his way,

20 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the Sabbath days.

21 And they were astonished at his doctrine : for his word was with power.

22 ¶ And in the synagogue there was a man, who had an

evil spirit, and cried out, with a loud voice,

23 Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy one of God.

24 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the evil spirit had thrown him in the midst he came out of him, and hurt him not.

25 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves saying, What a word is this! for with authority and power he commandeth the evil spirits, and they come out.

26 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

27 ¶ And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered into Simon's house. And Simon's wife's mother was taken with a great fever; and they besought him for her.

28 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever; and it left her: and immediately she arose and ministered unto them.

29 ¶ Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.

30 And evil spirits also came out of many, crying out and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not

to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.

31 And when it was day, he departed and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

32 And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also; for therefore am I sent.

33 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

#### CHAPTER V

Christ teacheth the people—Healeth one sick of the palsy.

AND it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret.

2 And saw two boats standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the boat.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great

multitude of fishes : and took them into their boat and their net was not broken.

7 And they beckoned unto their partners, who were in the other boat, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell on his knees at Jesus' feet.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken :

10 And so was also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not ; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their boats to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

12 ¶ And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold a man full of leprosy ; who seeing Jesus fell on his face, and besought him saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will : be thou clean. And immediately the leprosy departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man : but go, and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

15 But so much the more

went there a fame abroad of him : and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, who were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem : and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

18 ¶ And, behold, men brought in a bed, a man who was taken with a palsy : and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went upon the housetop, and let him down through the tiling with his couch into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thou art healed.

21 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God.

22 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day.

23 ¶ And after these things he went forth, and saw a pub-

## ST. LUKE—CHAP. V.

lican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom : and he said to him, Follow me.

24 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

25 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house : and there was a great company of publicans and of others that sat down with them.

26 But the scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners ?

27 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician ; but they that are sick.

28 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

29 ¶ And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees ; but thine eat and drink ?

30 And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them ?

31 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

32 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles ; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

33 But new wine must be put into new bottles ; and both are preserved.

34 No man also having

drunk old wine straightway desireth new : for he saith, The old is better.

### CHAPTER VI.

Christ reproveth the Pharisees' blindness, about the observance of the sabbath, by scripture, reason—He chooseth twelve apostles.

AND it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields : and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath days ?

3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read what David did when he was hungry, and those who were with him :

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shewbread, and gave also to them that were with him ; which it is not lawful to eat, but for the priests alone ?

5 And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught :

6 And there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day ; that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts



lican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom : and he said to him, Follow me.

24 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

25 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house : and there was a great company of publicans and of others that sat down with them.

26 But the scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners ?

27 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician ; but they that are sick.

28 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

29 ¶ And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees ; but thine eat and drink ?

30 And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them ?

31 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

32 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles ; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

33 But new wine must be put into new bottles ; and both are preserved.

34 No man also having

drunk old wine straightway desireth new : for he saith, The old is better.

## CHAPTER VI.

Christ reproveth the Pharisees' blindness, about the observance of the sabbath, by scripture, reason—He chooseth twelve apostles.

AND it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields : and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath days ?

3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read what David did when he was hungry, and those who were with him :

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shewbread, and gave also to them that were with him ; which it is not lawful to eat, but for the priests alone ?

5 And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught :

6 And there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day ; that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts

withal it shall be measured to you again.

30 And he spake a parable unto them; Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

31 The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master.

32 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

33 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearer to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

34 For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

35 For every tree is known by its fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.

36 A good man out of the good treasure of his spirit bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his spirit bringeth forth that which is evil.

37 ¶ And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

38 Whosoever cometh to me

and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like:

39 He is like a man who built a house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the storm beat vehemently upon that house, it could not shake it; for it was founded upon a rock.

40 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built a house upon the sand; against which the storm did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.

#### CHAPTER VII.

The centurion's servant healed—The widow's son raised.

**N**OW when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

2 And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this:

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.

6 Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him,

saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself; for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof:

7 But say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, go, and he goeth; and to another, come, and he cometh; and to my servant, do this, and he doeth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

11 ¶ And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a man carried out, who was thought to be dead; the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare him stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, arise.

15 And he sat up and began

to speak. And he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, that a great prophet is risen up among us, and, that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumor of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things.

19 ¶ And John calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come: or look we for another?

20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come: or look we for another?

21 And in that same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many that were blind he gave sight.

22 Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, and to the poor the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John,

What went ye out into the wilderness for to see?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, he is a great prophet.

26 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,

27 Who shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say unto you, among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist.

29 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God.

30 ¶ And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

31 They are like unto children, calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you and ye have not wept.

32 ¶ And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to eat.

33 And behold, a woman in the city, when she knew that Jesus sat to eat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

34 And she sat down at his feet behind him, weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hair of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with ointment.

35 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head.

36 Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since I came in, hath kissed my feet many times.

37 My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

38 Wherefore I say unto thee, her infirmities, which are many, are healed, for she loved much.

39 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

#### CHAPTER VIII.

The parable of the sower — Christ casteth out evil spirits, and raiseth Jarius' daughter.

AND it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout many cities and villages, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of heaven: and the twelve were with him,

2 And certain women who had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven evil spirits.

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, who ministered unto him of their substance.

4 ¶ And when much people

were gathered together, and were come to him out of many cities he spake by a parable :

5 A sower went out to sow his seed : and as he sowed, some fell by the wayside ; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock ; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns ; and the thorns sprang up with them, and choked them.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit a hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him saying, What might this parable be ?

10 Now the parable is this : the seed is the word of God.

11 Those by the wayside are they that hear ; then cometh the evil spirit, and taketh away the word out of their spirit,

12 Lest they should believe and be saved.

13 They on the rock are they, who, when they hear, receive the word with joy ; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns are they, who, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground are they, who, in an honest and good spirit, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it or putteth it under a bed ; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they who enter in may see the light.

17 For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest : neither any thing hid, that shall not be known and come to light.

18 ¶ Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press.

19 And it was told him by certain who said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

20 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these who hear the word of God, and do it.

21 ¶ Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a boat with his disciples : and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth.

22 But as they sailed, he fell asleep : and there came down a storm of wind on the lake ; and the boat was filling with water, and they were in jeopardy.

23 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the

wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

24 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

25 ¶ And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.

26 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, who had evil spirits a long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombs.

27 When he saw Jesus, he cried out and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee, torment me not.

28 For he had commanded the unclean spirits to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the evil spirits into the wilderness.

29 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many evil spirits were entered into him.

30 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

31 And there was there a herd of many swine feeding

on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

32 Then went the evil spirits out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

33 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country.

34 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the evil spirits were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

35 They also who saw it, told them by what means he that was possessed with evil spirits was healed.

36 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear; and he went up into the boat, and returned back again.

37 Now the man, out of whom the spirits were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying,

38 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city how great things Jesus had done unto him.

39 And it came to pass that, when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him : for they were all waiting for him.

40 ¶ And, behold, there came a man named Jarius, and he was a ruler of the synagogue ; and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him that he would come into his house :

41 For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a-dying. But as he went, the people thronged him.

42 ¶ And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, who had spent much upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

43 Came behind him, and touched the border of his garment ; and immediately her issue of blood stanchcd.

44 And Jesus said, Who touched me ? When all denied, Peter and they that were with him said, Master, the multitude throng thee and press thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me ?

45 And Jesus said, Somebody hath touched me ; for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.

46 And when the woman saw she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

47 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort :

thy faith hath made thee whole ; go in peace.

48 ¶ While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead ; trouble not the Master.

49 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not : believe only, and she shall be made whole.

50 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

51 And all wept and bewailed her : but Jesus said, Weep not ; she is not dead, but sleepeth : she is in a trance sleep.

52 And they laughed him to scorn, supposing that she was dead.

53 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

54 And she arose straightway : and he commanded to give her meat.

55 And her parents were astonished : but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

#### CHAPTER IX.

Christ sendeth his apostles to preach  
—He is transfigured.

**T**HEN he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all evil spirits, and to cure diseases.

2 And he sent his disciples to preach the kingdom of heaven, and to heal the sick.

3 And they departed, and went through the towns,

4 Preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

5 ¶ Now Herod the tetrarch heard what was done by Christ: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead;

6 And of some, that Elias had appeared; and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

7 And Herod said, John have I beheaded;

8 But who is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

9 ¶ And the apostles, when they were returned, told him what they had done. And he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place belonging to the city, called Bethsaida.

10 And the people, when they knew it, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

11 And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals; for we are here in a desert place.

12 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

13 For they were about five hundred men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

14 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

15 Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

16 And they did eat, and were satisfied; and they took up the fragments that remained.

17 ¶ And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him; and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

18 They answering said, John the Baptist; but some say, Elias; and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

19 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering said, The Christ of God.

20 And he strictly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing;

21 Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

22 ¶ And he said to them all, If any man will come after me,

23 Let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

24 For what is a man ad-



vantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose his life ?

25 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.

26 ¶ And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, Jesus took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

27 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistening.

28 And, behold, there appeared the spirits of Moses and Elias, and talked with him :

29 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease at Jerusalem.

30 But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep ; and when they awake, they saw his glory, and the two spirits that stood with him.

31 And there came a cloud, and overshadowed them :

32 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying,

33 This is my beloved Son : hear him.

34 And when the cloud was past, Jesus was found alone. And they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

35 ¶ And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him.

36 And, behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son ; for he is mine only child.

37 And, lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out ;

38 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out ; and they could not.

39 And Jesus answering said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you ? Bring thy son hither.

40 And as he was yet a coming, the evil spirit threw him down, and tare him. And Jesus rebuked the evil spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

41 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. But while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

42 Let these sayings sink down into your minds : for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.

43 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not : and they feared to ask him of that saying.

44 ¶ Then there arose a reasoning among them, who of them should be the greatest.

45 And Jesus, perceiving their thoughts, took a child, and set him by him,

46 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this child in my name receiveth me ; and

whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

47 ¶ And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out evil spirits in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followed not with us.

48 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not; for he that is not against us is for us.

49 ¶ And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,

50 And he sent messengers before him: and they went and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him.

51 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

52 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did?

53 But he turned and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.

54 For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.

55 ¶ And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

56 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

57 And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

58 Jesus said unto him, Let them bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

59 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.

#### CHAPTER X.

Christ sendeth out seventy disciples to preach.

**A**FTER these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come.

2 Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

3 Go your ways: behold I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes; and salute no man by the way.

5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.

6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest

upon it : if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give : for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you,

9 Heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The King of heaven is nigh unto you.

10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your way.

11 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

12 Woe unto thee, Chorazin ! woe unto thee, Bethsaida !

13 For if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon than for you

15 And thou, Capernaum, which art so exalted shall be brought low.

16 He that heareth you heareth me ; and he that despiseth you despiseth me ; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the evil spirits are subject unto us through thy name.

18 Behold, I give unto you power over all evil spirits.

19 Notwithstanding, in this

rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you.

20 ¶ In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from those who are wise in their own eyes, and revealed them unto babes : even so, Father ;

21 For so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 ¶ And he turned unto his disciples, and said privately,

23 Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see :

24 For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them ; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

25 ¶ And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal glory ?

26 He said unto him, What is written in the law ? how readest thou ?

27 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind ; and thy neighbour as thyself.

28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right : this do, and thou shalt be blest.

29 But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour ?

30 And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho.

and fell among thieves, who stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.

31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came, and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was; and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out some money, and gave it to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him: and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, who also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word.

40 But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

41 And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needful; and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

#### CHAPTER XI.

Christ teacheth his disciples to pray.

AND it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place, that he taught his disciples also to pray.

2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.

3 Give us day by day our daily bread.

4 And forgive us our debts; as we forgive those who are indebted to us. And lead us from temptation; and deliver us from evil.

5 And he said unto them, Who of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;

6 For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

7 And he from within shall

answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee?

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

10 For he that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

11 If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children; how much more shall your heavenly father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

14 ¶ And he was casting out an evil spirit, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the spirit was gone out, the dumb spake; and the people wondered.\*

15 And some tempting him, sought of him a sign from heaven.

\* Jesus said that the evil spirit had control of the man, and yet could not speak through him; that is the reason why he could speak when the evil spirit left him.

16 But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation;

17 And a family divided against itself is broken up.

18 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

19 But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

20 He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

21 When the evil spirit is driven out of a man, he is not satisfied, and seeks again to return unto the house from whence he came out.

22 ¶ And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation; they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet.

23 For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

24 The queen of the south shall rise up with the men of this generation, and condemn them; for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

25 The men of Nineveh shall rise up with this gene-

ration, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

26 No man ought, when he hath lighted a candle, put it in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they who come in may see the light.

27 The light of the body is the eye; therefore when thine eye is good it will direct thy body right; but when thine eye is evil, thy body will be directed wrong.

28 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness.

29 If thy whole body therefore be directed right, thou wilt keep from evil.

30 ¶ And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him; and he went in and sat down to meat.

31 And when the Pharisee saw it, he asked why that he had not first washed before dinner.

#### CHAPTER XII.

Christ preacheth to his disciples.—The parable of the rich man who built greater barns.

**A**ND when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

2 For the Holy Spirit shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

3 ¶ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak

to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

4 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?

5 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's enjoyment consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

6 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:

7 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

8 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

9 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

10 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy spirit shall leave thy body: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

11 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

#### CHAPTER XIII.

Christ preacheth repentance.—The fruitless fig-tree may not stand.

**J**ESUS spake a parable to them: A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon and found none.

2 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none; cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground?

3 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

4 And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

5 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

6 And behold there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself.

7 And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

8 And he laid his hand on her, and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

9 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them, therefore, come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day.

10 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his colt from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

11 And ought not this woman who hath been bound, lo, those eighteen years, be loosed from her infirmities on the sabbath day?

12 And when he had said these things, his adversaries were ashamed; and many people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

13 ¶ Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of heaven like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

14 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden; and it grew, and waxed a great plant; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

15 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?

16 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

17 And he went through the cities and villages, teaching and journeying toward Jerusalem.

#### CHAPTER XIV.

Christ healeth the dropsy on the sabbath.

AND it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees, to eat bread on the sabbath day, that they watched him.

2 And, behold, there was a certain man before him who had the dropsy.

3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and

Pharisees, saying, is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go;

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have a colt or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?

6 And they could not answer him again to these things.

#### CHAPTER XV.

Christ teacheth to avoid occasions of offence—He healeth ten lepers.

**T**HEN said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe unto him, through whom they come!

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, love him.

4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shouldst love him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 And the Lord said, Which of you, having a servant ploughing or feeding cattle, will say unto him, by and by, when he is come from the field, go and sit down to meat?

7 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready where-

with I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken;

8 And afterward thou shalt eat and drink?

9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? surely not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

11 ¶ And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, who stood afar off:

13 And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.

14 And when he saw them he said unto them, Go show yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,

16 And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.

17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

18 There are none returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

19 And he said unto him,



Arise, go thy way : thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven, so also shall the gospel of the Son of man be.

21 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

#### CHAPTER XVI.

Little children suffered to come unto Christ—The reward of those who forsake all for Christ's sake.

**A**ND Jesus spake a parable unto them that men ought always to pray, and not to faint ; saying that prayer was fervent desires of the spirit.

2 Saying, There was in a city a judge who feared not God, neither regarded man :

3 And there was a widow in that city ; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

4 And he would not for a while : but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man ;

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.

7 And shall not God avenge those who cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them ?

8 I tell you that he will avenge them speedily.

9 And he spake this parable unto certain who trusted in themselves that they were

righteous, and despised others:

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray ; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

13 And the publican standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner !

14 I tell you this man went down to his house justified rather than the other.

15 And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them : but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not : for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of heaven as a little child, shall in nowise enter therein.

18 And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit an eternal blessing ?

19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good ? there is none good, save one, that is, God.

20 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

22 Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing : scilicet part that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven : and come follow me. Any one who distributes part of his wealth to the poor, shall receive a blessing in this world and in the world to come.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful : for he was very rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God !

25 For it is easier for a camel to go through the needle's eye,\* than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

26 And they that heard it said, Who then can be saved ?

27 And he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.

28 Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.

29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or

wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and a great blessing in the world to come.

31 ¶ Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on :

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death : and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things : and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ And it came to pass that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the wayside, begging :

36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they who went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace : but he cried so much the more, Thou Son of David have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought

\* The Needle's Eye was a small gate in the walls of Jerusalem.

unto him : and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight : thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God : and the people, when they saw it gave praise unto God.

#### CHAPTER XVII.

Christ rideth into Jerusalem with triumph—The rulers would have destroyed him, but for fear of the people.

**A**ND Jesus entered and passed through Jericho.

2 And, behold, there was a man named Zaccheus who was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was ; and could not for the press, because he was little in stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him ; for he was to pass that way.

5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste, and come down : for to day I must abide in thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor ; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.

9 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house.

10 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

11 And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,

12 Saying, Go ye into the village over against you ; in the which at your entering ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat : loose him, and bring him hither.

13 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him ? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

14 And they that were sent went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

15 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt ?

16 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

17 And they brought him to Jesus : and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

18 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

19 And when he was come

nigh, even now at the ascent of the mount of Olives,

20 The whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen ;

21 Saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the Lord : peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

22 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

23 ¶ And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

24 Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace ! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

25 For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

26 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee ; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another ; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

27 And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought ;

28 Saying unto them, It is written, my house is the house of prayer ; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

29 And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief

priests and the scribes and the chief of the people sought to destroy him,

30 And could not find what they might do : for many of the people were very attentive to hear him.

#### CHAPTER XVIII.

The parable of the vineyard—Christ warneth his disciples to beware of the scribes.

AND it came to pass, that on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came with the elders,

2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, by what authority doest thou these things ? or who is he that gave thee this authority ?

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing ; and answer me :

4 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men ?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, from heaven ; he will say, why then believed ye him not ?

6 But and if we say, of men : all the people will stone us : for they are persuaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered that they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

9 Then began Jesus to speak a parable, thus : A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husband-

## ST. LUKE—CHAP. XVIII.

men, and went into a far country for a long time.

10 And at the season of ripe fruits, he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard ; but the husbandmen beat him and sent him away empty.

11 And again he sent another servant : and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And again he sent a third : and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, what shall I do ? I will send my beloved son : it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir : come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What, therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them ?

16 He will destroy these husbandmen, and will give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this, then, that is written : The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner.

18 Whosoever falleth upon that stone will be broken ; but on whomsoever it shall

fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chief priests, and the scribes, the same hour, sought to lay hands on him ; and they feared the people : for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, who should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, so that they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

21 And they asked him, saying : Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God truly :

22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar, or no ?

23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me ?

24 Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it ? They answered, and said, Cesar's.

25 And he said unto them : Render therefore unto Cesar the things which are Cesar's, and unto God the things which are God's.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people : and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

27 ¶ Then came to him certain of the Sadducees, who deny that there is any resur-

rection ; and they asked him,  
 28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us : If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren : and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.

31 And the third took her ; and in like manner the seven also ; and they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all, the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she ? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus saith unto them, Ye do err because ye know not the spirit neither the power of God

35 In the spirit life they are united only by congeniality.

36 Neither can they die any more : for they are angels ; now that the spirits of the dead are raised.

37 Even as Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

38 ¶ Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

39 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people he said unto his disciples,

40 Beware of the scribes,

who desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts.

41 Who devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers : the same shall receive greater condemnation.

#### CHAPTER XIX.

Christ commendeth the poor widow—  
 He foretelleth the destruction of the temple, and of Jerusalem.

AND he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury.

2 And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites.

3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more in proportion to her means than any of them.

4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God ; but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

5 ¶ And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said,

6 As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be ? and what sign will there be when these things come to pass ?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived.

9 When ye hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified : for these things must first come to pass.

10 Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom :

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences ; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake.

13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

14 Settle it therefore in your minds, not to meditate before what ye shall answer :

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends ; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of men for my name's sake.

18 In your patience possess ye your souls.

19 And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

20 Then let them who are in Judea flee to the mountains ; and let them who are in the midst of it depart out ; and let

not those who are in the country enter therewith.

21 For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

22 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into many nations : and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

23 ¶ And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your cares of this life, and so that day, come upon you unawares.

24 For as a snare shall it come upon you.

25 Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass.

26 And in the daytime he was teaching in the temple ; and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.

27 And the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

## CHAPTER XX.

Feast of unleavened bread—21 When Christ eateth the passover for the last time.

**N**OW the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passover.

2 And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him ; for they feared the people.

3 ¶ Then entered evil spirits into Judas surnamed Iscariot,

being of the number of the twelve.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

7 ¶ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.

9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the good man of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

13 And they went, and found as he had said unto them; and they made ready the passover.

14 And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

15 And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer:

16 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves:

17 ¶ And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, Eat, and as often as ye do it, do it in remembrance of me.

18 Likewise also he took the cup after supper, saying, Take this cup and drink of it, and as often as ye do it, do it in remembrance of me.

19 ¶ But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table.

20 And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed!

21 And they began to inquire among themselves which of them it was that should do this thing.

22 Jesus saith unto them, All of you shall be offended because of me this night; for it is written, I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

23 And Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise author-



ity upon them are called benefactors.

26 But ye shall not be so : but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger ? and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth ? is not he that sitteth at meat ? but I am among you as he that serveth.

28 Ye are they who have continued with me in my temptations.

29 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison and to death.

30 And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock will not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

31 And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing ? And they said, Nothing.

32 ¶ And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives ; and his disciples also followed him.

33 And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

34 And he withdrew himself from them a short distance, and kneeled down, and prayed,

35 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me : nevertheless, not my will, but thine, be done.

36 And there appeared an

angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him,

37 And when he rose up from prayer, and was come out to his disciples, he found them weeping for sorrow,

38 And said unto them, Why weep ye ? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

39 ¶ And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him.

40 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss ?

41 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, who were come to him, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves ?

42 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me : but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

43 ¶ Then took they him, and led him, and brought him into the high priest's house. And Peter followed afar off.

44 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them.

45 But a certain woman beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him and said, This man was also with him,

46 And he denied, saying, Woman, I know him not.

47 And after a little while

another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

48 And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

49 And Peter said, I know not the man. And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew.

50 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

51 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

52 ¶ And the men that held Jesus mocked him, and smote him.

53 And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesy, who is it that smote thee?

54 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

55 ¶ And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council, saying,

56 Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe:

57 And if I also ask you, ye will not answer me, nor let me go.

58 Hereafter shall the Son

of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

59 Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am.

60 And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

#### CHAPTER XXI

Jesus is accused before Pilate—He telleth the women who lament him, the destruction of Jerusalem.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying that he himself is Christ a king.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man was a Galilean.

7 And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad:

ST. LUKE—CHAP. XXI.

for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him ; and he hoped to have seen some wonders done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words ; but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together ; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 ¶ And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people.

14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people ; and, behold, I, having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him :

15 Neither did Herod ; for I sent Jesus to him, and, lo, nothing worthy of death was found in him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.

17 For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.

18 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas :

19 (Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.)

20 Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.

21 But they cried, saying, Crucify him, crucify him.

22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done ? I have found no cause of death in him : I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.

23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified : and the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.

24 And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.

25 And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired ; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

26 And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, who also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.

29 And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

30 And when they were come

to the place, which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the criminals, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

31 ¶ Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them ; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

32 And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others ; let him save himself, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

33 And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

34 And saying, If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself.

35 And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

36 ¶ And one of the criminals who were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.

37 But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation ?

38 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

39 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day thou shalt be with me in paradise.

40 Paradise is a state of probation in the spirit world.

41 And it was about the sixth

hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

42 And the sun was darkened, and the vail of the temple was rent in the midst.

43 ¶ And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit : and having said thus, he gave up the spirit.

44 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

45 And many people who came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

46 And all his acquaintance, and the women who followed him from Galilee, stood beholding these things.

47 ¶ And, behold, there was a man named Joseph, a counsellor ; and he was a good man, and a just :

48 The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them : he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews : who also himself waited for the kingdom of God.

49 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

50 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

51 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

52 And the women also, who came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

53 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath day according to the commandment.

# CHAPTER XXII.

Christ's resurrection declared—He appeared to two disciples—Promises the Holy Spirit and ascends into heaven.

**N**OW upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus

4 And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments :

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead ?

6 He is not here, but is risen : remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

7 Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and his spirit to rise,

and to be seen on the third day.

8 And they remembered his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and other women who were with them, who told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

12 Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre ; and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

13 ¶ And, behold, two of them, went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to pass, that, while they communed together and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad ?

18 And the one of them,

whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people:

20 And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had been he who should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to-day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, who were early at the sepulchre;

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a number of angels, who said that he was alive.

24 And certain of them who were with us went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.

25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the

Scriptures the things concerning himself.

28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

30 And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

32 And they said one to another; Did not our spirit burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures?

33 And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, (and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, in a room where they often met.)

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, (the door being shut and fastened, through fear of the Jews,) and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38 And he said unto them,

## ST. LUKE—CHAP. XXII.

Why are ye troubled? and why do such thoughts arise?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself; handle me, and see:

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of a honeycomb.

43 And he took it, and did appear to eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures,

46 And said unto them, Thus

it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and his spirit to rise from the dead and the third day to be seen.

47 And that repentance and love of God should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

50 ¶ And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

51 And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:

53 And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

## ST. JOHN.

THE HISTORY OF JESUS CHRIST WRITTEN BY JOHN,  
AS REVISED AND CORRECTED BY THE SPIRIT OF JESUS CHRIST.

### CHAPTER I.

The divinity, humanity, and office of Christ—20 The testimony of John—35 The calling of Andrew, Peter, and others.

**I**N the beginning was God, and the Word was with God.

2 All things were made by

God; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

3 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

4 And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

5 ¶ There was a man sent

from God, whose name was John.

6 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe.

7 He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light.

8 That was the true Light, which enlighteth men in this world.

9 ¶ John bare witness of Christ, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake,

10 He that cometh after me is preferred before me ; for he was before me.

11 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

12 No man hath seen God at any time ; but Jesus Christ hath declared him.

13 ¶ And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou ?

14 And he confessed, and denied not ; but confessed, I am not the Christ.

15 And they asked him, What then ? Art thou Elias ? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet ? And he answered, No.

16 Then said they unto him, Who art thou ? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself ?

17 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way

of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

18 And they who were sent were of the Pharisees.

19 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet ?

20 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water : but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not ;

21 He it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear.

22 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

23 ¶ The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world !

24 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man who is preferred before me ; for he was before me.\*

26 And I knew him not : but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

27 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him.

28 And I knew him not :

\* John, i, 34, and in other places, where Christ taketh upon himself the name of the Son of God, it means the same as when God called the posterity of Jacob his Son ; Exodus iv, 22, " Israel is my son, even my first-born."



but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he who baptizeth with the Holy Spirit.

29 And I saw and bare record that this is he who is called the Son of God, Jesus Christ, the great mediator.

30 ¶ Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples:

31 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God!

32 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

33 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwellest thou?

34 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.

35 One of the two who heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother.

36 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him,

37 We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.

38 ¶ The day following Jesus went forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.

39 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

40 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.

41 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

42 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed in whom is no guile!

43 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

44 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; for thou art the King of Israel.

45 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.

46 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God descending upon the Son of man.

## CHAPTER II.

Christ turneth water into wine—11 Many believed because of his wonders, 17 but he would not commit himself unto them.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana

of Galilee ; and the mother of Jesus was there :

2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee ? mine hour is not yet come.

5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you do it.

6 And there were set there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants who drew the water knew,) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine ; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse ; but thou hast kept the good wine until now.

11 This begining of wonderful things did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth

his glory ; and his disciples believed on him.

12 ¶ After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples ; and they continued there not many days.

13 ¶ And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting :

15 And said unto them, Take these things hence ; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise.

16 ¶ Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast day, many believed in his name when they saw the wonderful things which he did.

17 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, for he knew their thoughts.

### CHAPTER III.

Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessity of regeneration—23 John baptizeth—25 He beareth witness concerning Christ.

**T**HERE was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews :

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God ; for no man can do these things that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born again (to be born again

¶ Jesus saith that the water which appeared like wine was not made into wine, but was water yet when they drank of it, but the people were so controlled by me that they believed it to be wine.

is what is called death) he cannot see the kingdom of heaven.\*

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven.

6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, we speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not,

how shall ye believe if I tell ye of heavenly things?

13 For God sent not Jesus into the world to condemn the world; but that the world thro' his word might be saved.

14 ¶ He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in him.

15 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

16 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

17 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

18 ¶ After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized.

19 ¶ And John also was baptizing in Enon near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

20 For John was not yet cast into prison.

21 ¶ Then there arose a question between some of John's disciples and the Jews about purifying.

22 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all come to him.

\* From the 3d verse to the 12th of the 3d chapter of John Christ says, That he was speaking of what we call death, which is being born of the spirit, he does not say that we may be born again, but we must be born again. Being born of the spirit means to come forth from the body (what we call death).

23 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from God.

24 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

25 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy, therefore, is fulfilled.

26 He must increase, but I must decrease,

27 God is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth; but God is above all.

28 And what Jesus hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; and few receiveth his testimony.

29 He that hath received his testimony hath set to his seal that God is true.

30 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.

#### CHAPTER IV.

Jesus sitteth on Jacob's well—23 The harvest—44 A prophet is without honour in his own country.

**W**HEN therefore Jesus knew how the Pharisees had heard that he made and baptized more disciples than John,

2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,)

3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

4 Then cometh he to a city of Samaria,

5 Which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph.

6 Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, who am a woman of Samaria?

9 For the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldst have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the

water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting peace. The water that I will give you is the spirit of truth and righteousness, which shall spring up into everlasting joy.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain nor yet at Jerusalem worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.

23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth; for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 God is a Spirit; and they that worship him must wor-

ship him in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, who is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.

27 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the people,

28 Come, see a man who told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

29 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

30 ¶ In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

31 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.

32 My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.

33 Say not ye, there are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you,

34 Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.

35 And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit for life eternal:

36 That both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together.

37 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour:

38 Other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samar-

itans of that city believed on him for the saying of the woman, who testified, he told her all that ever she did.

40 So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days.

41 And many more believed because of his own word:

42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

43 ¶ Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee.

44 For Jesus himself testified that a prophet hath no honour in his own country.

45 Then when he was came into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

46 So Jesus came again into Cana, of Galilee, where he made the water-wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum.

47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.

49 The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die.

50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way: thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy son liveth.

52 Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed, and his whole house.

54 This is the second wonder that Jesus performed, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

#### CHAPTER V.

2 Pool of Bethesda—8 Jesus healed on the sabbath—28 John was a burning and a shining light.

**A**FTER this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the

pool, and whosoever then first after the preparation of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, who had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time diseased, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming another steppeth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed and walk.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

10 ¶ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that who said unto thee, take up thy bed, and walk?

13 And he that was healed knew not who it was that healed him.

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art healed: sin no more lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, who healed him.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day.

17 ¶ But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father.

19 Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, the Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater things than these that ye may marvel.

21 He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father who hath sent him.

22 Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting peace,

23 And shall not come into condemnation.

24 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of my Father who hath sent me.

25 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true.

26 ¶ There is another that beareth witness of me ; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true.

27 Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth.

28 He was a burning and a shining light : and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

29 ¶ But I have greater witness than that of John : for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

30 And the Father himself, who hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.

31 ¶ Search the Scriptures : for in them ye think ye have eternal life : and they are they which testify of me.

32 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you : but I receive honour from God.

33 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not : if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

34 How can ye believe, who receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God ?

35 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father : there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.

36 For had ye believed Mo-

ses, ye would have believed me : for he wrote of me.

37 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words ?

## CHAPTER VI.

10 Jesus feedeth the multitude—27 Labour not wholly for that which perisheth.

**A**FTER these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw that he healed so many.

3 And Jesus went up on to a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

5 ¶ When Jesus then lifted up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat ?

6 And this he said to prove him ; for he himself knew what he would do.

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, who hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes : but what are they among so many ?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place.



## ST. JOHN—CHAP. VI.

So the men sat down, in number about five hundred.

11 And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

12 When they were satisfied, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together.

14 Then those men, when they had seen what Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Jesus, therefore, perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

17 And entered into a boat and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five-and-twenty or thirty furlongs, they saw Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the boat: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the boat, and

immediately the boat was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people who stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was no other boat there save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone;

23 Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks:

24 When the people, therefore, saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took boats and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me because ye did eat of the loaves and were satisfied.

27 Labour not wholly for the meat which perisheth, but also for that which ye need in the spirit life.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

30 They said, therefore, unto him, What sign shewest thou

then, that we may see and believe thee? what dost thou work?

31 This is the will of him that sent me, that every one who seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may be blest in the future life:

32 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came from God?

33 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves.

34 No man can come to me, except the Father who hath sent me draw him:

35 It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

36 Not that any man hath seen the Father.

37 Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on me shall have the blessing of God!

38 It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are the light of life.

39 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew who would betray him.

40 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

41 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went back, and

walked no more with him.

42 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words that will bless us.

43 And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

44 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you will betray me?

45 He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that would betray him, being one of the twelve.

#### CHAPTER VII.

4 All secrets shall be brought to light  
—22 Circumcision—37 The great day of the feast.

**A**FTER these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

2 Now the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that they may see the works that thou doest.

4 For no man doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly.

5 If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come:

7 The world cannot hate you: but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast;

## ST. JOHN—CHAP. VII.

for my time is not yet fully come.

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 Jesus said, The words that I speak unto you, they are not mine, but his that sent me.

16 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.

17 He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

18 Moses gave you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law. Why go ye about to kill me?

19 The people answered and said, They have an evil spirit who go about to kill thee.

20 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

21 Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers; and ye on the sabbath day circumsise a man.

22 If a man on the sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath day?

23 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

24 Then said some of them, Is not this he, whom they seek to kill?

25 But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

26 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

27 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

28 But I know him; for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

29 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

30 And many of the people believed on him, and said,

When Christ cometh, will he do more wonders than these which this man hath done?

31 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

32 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.

33 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

34 Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

35 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

36 In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

37 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the prophet.

38 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

39 Hath not the Scriptures said, that Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

40 So there was a division

among the people because of him.

41 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

42 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

43 They answered, Never man spake like this man.

44 Then the Pharisees, answered them, Are ye also deceived?

45 Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him?

46 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

47 Nicodemus saith unto them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,)

48 Doth our law judge any man, before it hear him, and know what he doeth?

49 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

50 And every man went unto his own house.

#### CHAPTER VIII.

4 The woman taken in adultery—38 I speak what I have seen with my Father—41 You do the deeds of your Father.

**J**ESUS went unto the mount of Olives.

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.

3 And the scribes and Phari-

sees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery, and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the floor, as though he heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the floor.

9 And they who heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out.

10 When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman,

11 He said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? they have all gone.

12 ¶ Jesus spake at another time unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.

14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear

record of myself, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.

15 Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgment is true: For I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

17 It is also written in your law that the testimony of two men is true.

18 I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.

19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple; and no man laid hands on him for his hour was not yet come.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me: whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go ye cannot come,

23 And he said unto them, Ye are of this world; I am not of this world.

24 Then said they unto him, Who art thou?

25 And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to say and to judge of you : but he that sent me is true ; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself ; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me is with me : the Father hath not left me alone ; for I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words many believed on him.

31 ¶ Then said Jesus to those Jews who believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples, indeed ;

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We are Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man : how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free ?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

35 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

36 I know that ye are Abraham's seed,

37 But ye seek to kill me,

because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father : and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God : this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We were not born of fornication ; we have one Father, even God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me : for I proceeded forth and came from God ; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech ?

44 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

45 And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me ?

46 Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing : it is my father that honoureth me ; of whom ye say that he is your God.

47 Yet ye have not known him ; but I know him, and keep his saying.

48 Your father Abraham would have rejoiced to see my day.

49 Then took they up stones

## ST. JOHN—CHAP. IX.

to cast at him : but Jesus went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

### CHAPTER IX.

¶ Blindness removed — 8 The Pharisees offended — 28 They revile the man, who was born blind.

**A**ND as Jesus passed by, he saw a man who was blind from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind ?

3 Jesus answered : Neither were the sins of this man or his parents, the cause of his being born blind, but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day :

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay.

7 And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, which is by interpretation, Sent. He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbors therefore, and they who before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged ?

9 Some said, This is he :

others said, He is like him : but he said, I am he.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened ?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me : go to the pool of Siloam, and wash : and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he ? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.

14 And it was the sabbath day when Jesus prepared the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man who is a sinner do such things ? And there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes ? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

24 Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he is a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples.

29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Jesus said, I am come into this world, that they who see not might see.



## ST. JOHN—CHAP. X.

### CHAPTER X.

Christ is the door, and the good Shepherd—3 The sheep hear the Shepherd's voice—27 My sheep hear my voice—39 He escapeth from the Jews—40 and goeth again beyond Jordan, where many believe on him.

**V**ERILY, verily, I say unto you, he that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2 I am the door of the sheep.

3 My sheep hear my voice, and they know me ;

4 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him ; for they know not the voice of strangers.

5 This parable spake Jesus unto them ; but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

6 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

7 By me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

8 I am the good shepherd : but he that is a hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth ; and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

9 The hireling fleeth, because he is a hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

10 I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

11 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father.

12 ¶ There was a division, therefore, again among the Jews for these sayings.

13 And many of them said, He hath an evil spirit, and is mad ; why hear ye him ?

14 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath an evil spirit. Can an evil spirit open the eyes of the blind ?

15 ¶ And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

16 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch..

17 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt ? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

18 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not : the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

19 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

20 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.

21 And I give unto them eternal life ; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand (life is here meant a condition of holiness and no man can pluck them out of that condition)

22 My Father, who gave them to me, is greater than all : and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

23 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

24 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father ; for which of those works do ye stone me ?

25 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not ; but for blasphemy : and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

26 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods ?

27 If ye called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken :

28 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest ; because I said I am the Son of God.

29 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

30 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works ; that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me.

31 Therefore they sought again to take him ; but he escaped out of their hands,

32 And went away, again beyond Jordon into the place where John at first baptized ; and there he abode.

33 And many resorted unto him and said, John did no wonders : but all things that John spake of this man were true.

34 And many believed on him there.

CHAPTER XI.

Christ raiseth Lazarus — 30 Jesus wept  
45 Many Jews believe — 47 The chief  
priests and Pharisees gather a council  
against Christ.

**N**OW a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.

2 It was that Mary who anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.

3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold he whom thou lovest is sick.

4 When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode four days out in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that saith he to his disciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 His disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee ; and goest thou thither again ?

9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day ? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because it is dark.

11 These things said he : and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth ;

but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

13 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already.

14 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off :

15 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

16 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him : but Mary sat still in the house.

17 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been there, my brother had not died.

18 But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.

18 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again, he is not dead.

19 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

20 Jesus said, His spirit will rise when it leaves the body.

21 And she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying,

22 The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

23 As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

24 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

25 The Jews then who were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary

26 That she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

27 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been there, my brother had not died.

28 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping who came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, .

29 And said, Where have ye laid him ? They said unto him, Lord, come and see.

30 Jesus wept.

31 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him !

32 And some of them said, Could not this man, who opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died ?

33 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

34 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him whom they supposed to be dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh : for he hath been dead four days.

35 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldst believe, thou shouldst see the glory of God ?

36 Then they took away the stone from the place where

the body was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father I thank thee that thou hast heard me.

37 And I knew that thou hearest me always : but because of the people who stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.

38 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

39 And he came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes ; and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

40 Then many of the Jews who came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.

41 But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

42 Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we ? for this man doeth many wonders.

43 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him ; and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation.

44 Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

45 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews ; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples,

46 ¶ And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand ; and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves.

47 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast ?

48 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he was, he should shew it, that they might take him.

#### CHAPTER XII.

3 The people flock to see Lazarus—

6 Christ rideth into Jerusalem—

17 He foretelleth his death.

**T**HEN Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was.

2 There they made him a supper ; and Martha served : Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

3 Many people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there : and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also.

4 ¶ But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus to death ;

5 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

6 ¶ On the next day many people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

7 Took branches of palm

ST. JOHN—CHAP. XII.

trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna : blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

8 And Jesus, when he had found a young colt rode thereon ; as it is written,

9 Fear not, daughter of Zion : behold, thy King cometh, riding on a colt.

10 These things understood not his disciples at the first : but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

11 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, bare record.

12 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this wonder.

13 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing ? behold, the world is gone after him.

14 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast :

15 The same came therefore to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

16 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew : and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

17 ¶ And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

18 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone : but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

19 If any man serve me, let him follow me ; and where I am, there shall also my servants be : if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

20 Now is my soul troubled ; and what shall I say ? Father, save me from this hour :

21 Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.

22 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered : others said, An angel spake to him.

23 Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

24 Now is the judgment of this world : now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

25 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

26 The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever :

27 And how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up ? who is this Son of man ?

28 Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you : for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.

29 While ye have light, be-

lieve in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed.

30 ¶ But though he had done so many wonderful things before them, yet they believed not on him :

31 ¶ Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him ; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue :

32 For they feared men more than they feared God.

33 ¶ Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth on him that sent me.

34 And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me.

35 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.

36 And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not : for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

37 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him : the word that I have spoken unto you, by the same ye shall be judged.

38 For I have not spoken of myself ; but the Father who sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.

39 Whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

CHAPTER XIII.

5 Jesus washeth the disciples' feet ; and exhorteth them to humility and charity—31 Commandeth them to love one another—34 And forewarneth Peter of his denial.

**N**OW before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own who were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2 He riseth after supper, and laid aside his garments ; and took a towel, and girded himself.

3 After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

4 Then cometh he to Simon Peter : and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet ?

5 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now ; but thou shalt know hereafter

6 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

7 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.

8 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again,

9 He said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you ?

10 Ye call me Master and

Lord : and ye say well ; for so I am.

11 If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet ; ye also ought to wash one another's feet.

12 For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

13 Verily, verily, I say unto you, the servant is not greater than his lord ; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him.

14 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

15 Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he.

16 Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me ; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

17 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you will betray me.

18 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

19 Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.

20 Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

21 He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it ?

22 Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And

when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

23 Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

24 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

25 For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast : or, that he should give something to the poor.

26 He then, having received the sop, went immediately out ; and it was night.

27 ¶ Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

28 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

29 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me ; and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come : so now I say to you.

40 A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another ; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

41 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

42 ¶ Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou ? Jesus answered him, Whither I go thou canst not follow me now ; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

43 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.

44 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, the cock shall not crow till thou hast denied me thrice.

CHAPTER XIV.

2 Christ comforteth his disciples with the hope of heaven—13 Assureth their prayers in his name to be effectual—15 Requireth love and obedience—16 Promiseth the Holy Spirit, the Comforter.

**L**ET not your spirit be troubled : ye believe in God, believe also in me.

2 In my Father's house are many mansions : if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself ; that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also ; and greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father.

6 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandments.

7 And I will pray the Father,

8 And he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever ;

9 Even the Spirit of truth ; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not,

neither knoweth him : but ye know him ;

10 For he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

11 I will not leave you comfortless : I will come to you.

12 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more ; but ye see me : because I live, ye shall live also.

13 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me ; and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

14 Judas saith unto him (not Judas Iscariot), Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world ?

15 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words : and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him,

16 He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings : and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's, who sent me.

17 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

18 But the Comforter, who is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

19 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you : not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your



spirits be troubled, neither let them be afraid.

20 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father : for my Father is greater than I.

21 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe.

22 But that the world may know that I love the Father ; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

#### CHAPTER XV.

The consolation and mutual love between Christ and his members, under the parable of the vine—26 The Holy Spirit and the apostles are to testify of Christ.

**I** AM the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away : and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

3 Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine ; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, ye are the branches. He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit ; for without me ye can do nothing.

6 If a man abide not in me,

he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered ; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, agreeably with God's will, and it shall be done unto you.

8 Herein is my father glorified, that ye bear much fruit ; so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you : continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love ; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

12 This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Henceforth I call you not servants : for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth :

14 But I have called you friends ; for what I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

15 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain :

16 That whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you,

ye know that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love its own : but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you,

20 Remember the word that I said unto you, the servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you ; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin ; but now they have no cloak for their sin.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.

25 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.

26 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning of my preaching.

#### CHAPTER XVI.

Christ's promise of the Holy Spirit—

14 The importance of prayer—

33 Peace in Christ, and in the world affliction.

**T**HESE things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the synagogues : yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.

3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father nor me.

4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them.

5 But soon I go my way to him that sent me ; and none of you asketh me, whither goest thou ?

6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your hearts.

7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth ; it is expedient for you that I go away : for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you ; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment :

9 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

10 Howbeit when the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth ; and he will shew you things to come.

11 Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice ; and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

12 A woman when she is in

travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy.

13 And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

14 Verily, verily, I say unto you, whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you if it is agreeable with his will.

15 Ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

16 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of my Father.

17 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

18 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

19 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to my Father.

20 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb.

21 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

22 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?

23 Behold, the hour cometh, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

24 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

#### CHAPTER XVII.

5 and 13 That they may be one as we are one—8 Sanctify them through thy truth—20 To glorify them, and all other believers with him in heaven.

**N**OW they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee.

2 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

3 I pray for the world for they are thine.

4 And all mine are thine; and I am glorified in them.

5 And now I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are one.

6 I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they believe thy word.

7 I pray that thou shouldst keep them from the evil.

CHAPTER XVIII.

8 Sanctify them through thy truth : thy word is truth.

9 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

10 And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

11 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also who shall believe on me through their word ;

12 That they all may be one ; as thou, Father, art in me, that they also may be one in us : that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

13 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them ; that they may be one, even as we are one :

14 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one ; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

15 Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am ; that they may love thy word, which thou hast given me :

16 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee : but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

17 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it ; that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

3 Judas betrayeth Jesus—6 The officers fall to the ground—15 Peter's denial.

**W**HEN Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into which he entered, and his disciples.

2 And Judas also, who betrayeth him, knew the place : for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples.

3 Judas then, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.

4 Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye ?

5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also, who betrayed him, stood with them.

6 As soon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye ? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered, I have told you that I am he : if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way :

9 Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him,

10 And led him away to Anas ; for he was father-in-law

to Caiaphas, who was the high priest that same year.

11 ¶ And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple: that disciple was known unto the high priest,

12 And went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.

13 But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple, who was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

14 Then saith the woman (that kept the door), unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this man's disciples? He saith, I am not.

15 And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals, for it was cold; and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

16 ¶ The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

17 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogues, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing.

18 Why askest thou me? ask them who heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said.

19 And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers who stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?

20 Jesus answered him, If I

have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

21 Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.

22 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself. They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not.

23 One of the servants of the high priest, saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

24 Peter then denied again; and immediately the cock crew.

25 ¶ Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgment: and it was early; and they themselves went not into the judgment hall; but stopped in the hall where they were to eat the passover.

26 Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man?

27 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a criminal, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

28 Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death:

29 Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again,

30 And called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews?

31 Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or

did others tell it thee of me?

32 Pilate answered, I am a Jew. Thine own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done?

33 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

34 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world: and that I should bear witness unto the truth; and every one that heareth the truth is willing to hear my words.

35 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault at all.

36 But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

37 Then cried some of them, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

#### CHAPTER XIX

Christ is crowned with thorns and derided—19 Title on the cross—

28 He dieth—31 His side is pierced

—38 He is buried by Joseph and Nicodemus.

**T**HEN Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him.

2 And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you that ye may know that I find no fault in him.

5 Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them, Behold the man!

6 When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify him, crucify him! Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify him: for I find no fault in him.

7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he said he was the Son of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid;

9 And went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee?

11 Jesus answered, Thou couldst have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him : but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesar's friend : whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour : and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King !

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him ! Pilate said unto them, Shall I crucify your King ? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

16 Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led him away.

17 ¶ And Simon bearing his cross, they went forth into a place called Calvary.

18 Where they crucified him, and two others with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

19 And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

20 This title then read many of the Jews ; for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city : and it

was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin.

21 Then said some of the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews ; but that he said, I am King of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered, What I have written I have written.

23 ¶ Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part ; and drew lots for his coat : now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be : that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son !

27 Then saith he to his disciple, Behold thy mother ! And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home.

28 ¶ After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

29 Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar : and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished : and he bowed his head, and gave up the spirit.

31 The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day, (for that sabbath day was a high day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first and of the other who was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs :

34 But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true ; and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

36 For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.

37 And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

38 ¶ And after this Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate

that he might take away the body of Jesus : and Pilate gave him leave. He came therefore, and took the body of Jesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, (who at the first came to Jesus by night,) and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds weight.

40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden ; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation day ; for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

## CHAPTER XX.

Mary cometh to the sepulchre ; 3 so do Peter and John, ignorant of the resurrection 11 Jesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples—24 The incredulity, and confession of Thomas—30 The object for which John wrote his gospel.

**T**HE first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, very early in the morning unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone was taken away from the sepulchre.

2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

3 Peter therefore went forth,



and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together : and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And he stooping down, and looking in, saw the linen clothes lying ; yet went he not in.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie.

7 And the napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself.

8 Then went in also the other disciple, who came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed.

9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, That Christ must rise from the dead. \*

10 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping : and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou ? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my

Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou ? whom seekest thou ? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni ; which is to say, Master,

17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not ; for I am not yet ascended to my Father : but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father ; and to my God and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

19 Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut and fastened, where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you : as

\* Christ says that his resurrection was a resurrection of the spirit only ; and that is the only kind of resurrection there ever was or ever will be.

my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Spirit:

23 ¶ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

24 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

25 ¶ And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut and fastened, through fear of the Jews, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

26 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side; and be not faithless, but believing.\*

27 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. (Thomas did not put his finger into the nail holes, or his hand into his side, but saw and believed.)

28 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: bless-

\* Christ said that the angels took his body away, and that nothing but his spirit arose, which is the new birth, or being born of the spirit. As he said to Nicodemus, Marvel not, I say unto thee, ye must be born again.

ed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

29 ¶ And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book:

30 But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have blessings by following his examples.

#### CHAPTER XXI.

Christ appearing to his disciples when fishing—12 He dineth with them.

**A**FTER these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he himself

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a boat immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No.

6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher's coat unto him, for he was naked, and did cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a boat, (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) and they with an other crew to help, drag the net with fishes.

9 As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and bread.

10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread and giveth, them and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him,

Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkest whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; who also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, who is he that betrayeth thee?

21 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, if they should be written every one, that it would make many volumes.

# ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

## CHAPTER I.

4 Christ preparing his apostles to behold his ascension—9 Christ ascendeth into heaven—12 Went to Jerusalem, a sabbath day's journey.

**T**HE former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach,

2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Spirit had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen:

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God:

4 And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father,

5 For John, truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom of Israel?

7 And he saith unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power.

8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked steadfastly towards heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;

11 Who also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, who is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come again.

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey.\*

13 And when they were come in they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James.

14 These all continued with

\* Sabbath day's journey, three and a-half miles.

one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about a hundred and twenty,)

16 Men and brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, who was guide to them that took Jesus.

17 For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry.

18 Wherefore of these men who have accompanied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

19 Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.

20 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias

21 And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, who knowest the minds of all men, shew whether of those two thou hast chosen.

22 That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

23 And they gave forth their lots, and the lot fell upon

Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

## CHAPTER II.

The apostles filled with the Holy Spirit and speaking divers languages, are admired by some and derided by others—14 Peter sheweth that the apostles speak by the power of the Holy Spirit—17 In the last days I will pour out my spirit: and your sons and daughters shall prophesy.—38 A great number are converted and baptized—40 The apostles perform many wonders, and God daily increaseth his church.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak in other languages as the Spirits gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of many nations.

6 Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

7 And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these who speak Galileans?

8 And how hear we every

man in our own tongue, where in we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes,

11 Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our languages the wonderful works of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine.

14 ¶ Bet Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words:

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel;

17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:

18 And on my servants and on my hand-maidens I will

pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy:

19 And I will show wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke:

20 The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon appear like blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come:

21 And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be blessed.

22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know:

23 He being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain:

24 Whom God hath raised his spirit.

25 For David speaketh concerning Jesus, I foresaw the Lord always before my face; for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved:

26 Therefore did my spirit rejoice, and my tongue was glad;

27 Because thou wilt not leave my spirit in the grave, but shall come forth a spiritual body.

28 Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

## THE ACTS—CHAP. III.

29 Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day.

30 Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had made known unto him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne;

31 Jesus' spirit hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.

32 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear.

33 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

34 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their spirit, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?

35 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

36 For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, as many as the Lord our God shall call.

37 And with many other words did he testify and ex-

hort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation.

38 ¶ Then they who gladly received his word were baptized: and there were added unto them about three thousand souls.

39 And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

40 And fear came upon many souls: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles.

41 And all that believed were together, and had things in common;

42 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

43 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart,

44 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

### CHAPTER III.

6 Peter healeth the lame man—12 Preacheth to the people who came to see the man he had cured—13 Reprehends them for crucifying Jesus—19 He exhorteth them by repentance and faith to seek salvation—21 Whom the heavens must receive until the times of restitution.

NOW Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour.

2 And a certain man lame

from his birth was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple ;

3 Who, seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an alms.

4 And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him with John, said, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none ; but such as I have give I thee : In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up : and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength.

8 And he leaping up stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God :

9 And the people saw him walking and praising God :

10 And they knew that it was he who sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple : and they were filled with wonder and amazement, at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man who was healed held Peter and John, most of the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomon's, greatly wondering.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why

marvel ye at this ? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk ?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus ; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go.

14 But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you ;

15 And killed the Prince of life, whose spirit God hath raised from the dead ; whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his name, through faith in his name, hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know : yea, the faith which is by him hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

17 And now, brethren, I think that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that you may receive a blessing when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, who before was preached unto you.

21 Whom the heaven must



## THE ACTS—CHAP. IV.

receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

22 For Moses truly said unto the Fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days.

24 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

25 Unto you first, God having raised up his son Jesus sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

### CHAPTER IV.

1 The rulers offended with Peter's sermon.—5 Upon examination Peter boldly avoweth the lame man to have been healed by the name of Jesus.—13 They command him and John to preach no more in that name.—31 And God, by moving the place where they were assembled, testified that he heard their prayer.

**A**ND as they spake unto the people, the priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them,

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preach-

ed through Jesus the resurrection of the spirit from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold until the next day, for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit many of them who heard believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

6 And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked By what power, or by what name have ye done this?

8 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole;

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whose spirit God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

11 This is the stone which was set at naught of your builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 ¶ Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and

John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled ;

13 And they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

14 And beholding the man who was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves.

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a wonderful thing hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it.

17 But that it spread no further among the people, let us strictly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.

18 And they called them and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you, more than unto God, judge ye.

20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for many glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was above forty years old on whom this healing was performed.

23 ¶ And being let go they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God, with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God, who hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that is in them.

25 Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things?

26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together,

28 For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word,

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy child Jesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all

filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one mind and of one spirit: neither said any of them that aught of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had things common.

33 And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, the son of consolation,) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus,

37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles' feet.

#### CHAPTER V.

3 Ananias and Sapphira his wife lie to the Holy Spirit—12 The apostles work wonders—18 and are again imprisoned—19 but are delivered by an angel, bidding them to preach openly to all—33 They are in danger of being killed—40 They are beaten.

**B**UT a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept back part of the

price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath the evil spirit tempted you to lie to the Holy Spirit, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

4 While it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thy mind? thou hast not lied unto men, only but unto God the great Spirit.

5 And Ananias hearing these words fell down in a trance, and was supposed to be dead.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them who have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and the young men came in, and found her, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon

as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders wrought among the people; (and they were with one accord in Solomon's porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man join himself to them: but the people magnified them.

14 And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women;)

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them who were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.

17 ¶ Then the high priest rose up, and all they who were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees,) and were filled with indignation,

18 And laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said,

20 Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entered into the temple early in the morning,

and taught. But the high priest came, and they who were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doors: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high priest and the captain of the temple and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned.

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the council: and the high priest asked them,

28 Saying, Did not we straitly command you that ye should not teach in this name? and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us.

29 ¶ Then Peter and the other apostles answered and

said, We ought to obey God rather than men.

30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel.

32 And we are his witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Spirit, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them.

34 Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, who had a good reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space;

35 And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what ye intend to do as touching these men.

36 For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be somebody; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered and brought to nought.

37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished; and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and

let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to nought:

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest unhappily ye be found even to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.

42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

#### CHAPTER VI.

3 The apostles desirous to have the poor taken care of—12 Who is taken of those, whom he confounded in disputing, 13 and falsely accused of blasphemy against the law and the temple.

AND in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.

3 Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom

we may appoint over this business.

4 But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch;

6 Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

8 ¶ And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great wonders among the people.

9 Then there arose certain men of the synagogue, which is called the synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia and of Asia, disputing with Stephen.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men, who said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and against God.

12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the council,

13 And set up false witnesses, who said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law:

14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customs which Moses delivered us.

15 And all that sat in the council, looking steadfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

#### CHAPTER VII.

Stephen permitted to answer to the accusation—20 Before Moses was born, temples were built—37 That Moses himself witnessed of Christ—52 Their murdering of Christ, the Just one.

**T**HEN said the high priest. Are these things so?

2 And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken; The angel of God appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land, whercin ye now dwell.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no, not so much as to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possess-

ion, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.

6 And God spake on this wise, That his seed should sojourn in a strange land ; and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat them evil four hundred years.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God : and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.

8 And he gave him the covenant of circumcision : and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day ; and Isaac begat Jacob ; and Jacob begat the twelve patriarchs.

9 And the patriarchs, moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt : but God was with him,

10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt ; and he made him governor over Egypt and all his house.

11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction : and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.

13 And at the second time Joseph was made known to his brethren ; and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.

14 Then sent Joseph, and

called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls.

15 So Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, he, and our fathers,

16 And were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor, the father of Sychem.

17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another king arose, who knew not Joseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.

20 In which time Moses was born, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his father's house three months :

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds.

23 And when he was full forty years old, it came into his mind to visit his brethren the children of Israel.

24 And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian :

25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood how that God by his hand would deliver them ; but they understood not.

26 And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren ; why do ye wrong one to another ?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us ?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday ?

29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Midian, where he begat two sons.

30 And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight : and as he drew near to behold it, the voice of the angel came unto him,

32 I have come in the name of the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled and durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet : for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

34 I have seen the affliction of my people who are in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down

to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge ? the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hand of the angel who appeared to him in the bush.\*

36 He brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty years.

37 ¶ This is that Moses, who said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me ; him shall ye hear.

38 This is he that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel who spake to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers : who received the lively oracles to give unto us.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their minds turned back again into Egypt,

40 Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us : for as for this Moses, who brought us out of the land of Egypt, we know not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands.

42 Then God turned, and



## THE ACTS—CHAP. VII.

gave them up to worship the host of heaven ; as it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts and sacrifices, by the space of forty years in the wilderness.

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them : and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen.

45 Which also our fathers who came after brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drove out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David ;

46 Who found favour before God, and desired to find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

47 But Solomon built him a house.

48 Howbeit the Most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands : as saith the prophet,

49 Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool : what house will ye build me ? saith the Lord : or what is the place of my rest ?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things ?

51 ¶ Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in mind and ears,

ye do always resist the Holy Spirit ; as your fathers did, so do ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted ? and have slain them who shewed before of the coming of the Just One : of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers.

53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the soul, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the Holy Spirit, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the angel of God, and Jesus standing on his right hand.

56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of the angel of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord,

58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him ; and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, ye yielded up his spirit.

CHAPTER VIII.

3 Saul made havoc with the churches  
—7 Evil spirits came out of many—  
17 By laying on of hands many receive the holy spirit—38 The eunuch baptized.

**A**ND Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea, and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havoc of the church, entering into many houses, and hailing men and women committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the wonders which he did.

7 For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed,

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certain man, called Simon, who beforetime in the same city used sorcery, giving out that him-

self was some great one:

10 To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had disturbed them with soceries.

12 But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the wonders and signs which were done.

14 Now when the apostles who were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John:

15 Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Spirit.

16 For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Spirit was given, he offered them money.

19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Spirit.

20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter : for thy spirit is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, and perhaps the thought of thy spirit may be changed.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me.

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

26 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And he arose and went : and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, a eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet.

29 Then the spirit said unto

Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest ?

31 And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me ? And he desired Phillip that he would come up and sit with him.

32 The place of the Scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter ; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth :

33 In his humiliation his judgment was taken away : and who shall declare his generation ? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this ? of himself, or of some other man ?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water : and the eunuch said, See, here is water ; what doth hinder me to be baptized ?

37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine soul, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still : and they went down both into the

water, both Philip and the eunuch ; and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the holy spirits caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more : and he went on his way rejoicing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus : and passing through he preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

# CHAPTER IX.

1 Saul, going towards Damascus—4 Is stricken down to the earth—10 Is called to the apostleship—18 And is baptized by Ananias—20 He preacheth Christ boldly—23 The Jews lay waight to kill him—32 Peter healeth Eneas.

**A**ND Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest.

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

3 And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus : and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me ?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord ? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest : it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

6 And he tremblingly and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do ?

And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 And the men who journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth ; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man ; but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 ¶ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias ; and to him said the Spirit in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold I am here.

11 And the Spirit said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judas for one called Saul, of Tarsus : for, behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem :

14 And here he hath authority from the chief priests to bind all that call on thy name.

15 But the Spirit of the Lord said unto him, Go thy way : for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before

the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel :

16 For I will show him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house ; and putting his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Spirit, even Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Spirit.

18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales : and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples who were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard him were amazed, and said : Is not this he that destroyed them who called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests ?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews who dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him :

24 But their laying wait was

known of Saul. And they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he essayed to join himself to the disciples : but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Spirit of the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the name of Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians : but they went about to slay him.

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified ; and walking in the fear of God, and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all quarters, he came down also to the saints who dwelt at Lydda.

## THE ACTS—CHAP. X.

33 And there he found a certain man named Eneas, who had kept his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsy.

34 And Peter said unto him, Eneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole : arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And many who dwelt at Lydda and Saron saw him, and turned to God.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas : this woman was full of good works and almsdeeds which she did.

37 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and appeared to them to be dead : whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber : and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed ; and turning him to the body said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes :

and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lifted her up ; and when he had called the saints and widows, he presented her well.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa ; and many believed in the Lord.

43 And it came to pass, that he tarried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

### CHAPTER X.

Cornelius, a devout man—5 Being commanded by an angel, sendeth for Peter—11 Who by a vision is taught not to despise the Gentiles—34 As he preacheth Christ to Cornelius—44 The Holy Spirit falleth on them.

**T**HERE was a certain man in Cesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band,

2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, who gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God always.

3 He saw in a vision evidently, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord ? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter :

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side : he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

## THE ACTS—CHAP. X.

7 And when the angel who spake unto Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him continually ;

8 And when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow, as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the housetop to pray about the sixth hour :

10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten : but while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth :

12 Wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter ; kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord ; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrice : and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen should

mean, behold, the men who were sent from Cornelius had made inquiry for Simon's house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, who was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing : for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men who were sent unto him from Cornelius ; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek : what is the cause wherefore ye are come ?

22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by a holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them. And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entered into Cesarea, And Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up ; I myself also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation ; but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for : I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me ?

30 And Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting until this hour ; and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and behold, a man's spirit stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon, whose surname is Peter ; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner by the sea side : who, when he cometh, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee : and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore we are all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I

perceive that God is no respecter of persons :

35 But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ : he is Lord of all :

37 That word, I say, ye know, which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached ;

38 How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power : who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the evil spirit ; for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem ; whom they slew and hanged on a tree :

40 And God raised up his Spirit, and shewed him openly the third day,

41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before of God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he who was ordained of God to preach to the people.

43 To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall have a blessing.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Spirit



fell on many who heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision who believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Spirit.

46 For they heard them speak different languages, and magnify God.

47 Then answered Peter, can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, who have received the Holy Spirit as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

#### CHAPTER XI.

5 Peter's vision on the house-top—

16 Peter confirms John's baptism by the Holy Spirit—27 Prophets come from Jerusalem to Antioch.

**A**ND the apostles and brethren that were in Judea heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order unto them, saying,

5 I was in the city of Joppa praying: and in a trance I saw a vision, a certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven

by four corners; and it came even to me:

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter; slay and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord, for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entered into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And, behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover these six brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, who stood and said unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter;

14 Who shall tell thee words whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the Holy Spirit fell on them, as on us at the beginning.

16 Then remembered I the

word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I, that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto good works.

19 ¶ Now they who were scattered abroad on account of the persecutions that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but unto the Jews alone.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.

23 Who, when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of mind they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Spirit, and of faith: and many people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul.

26 And when he had found him he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass that a whole year they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people. And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to pass in the days of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren who dwelt in Judea:

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

## CHAPTER XII.

King Herod persecuteth the Christians—7 The angel of the Lord took Peter out of prison—20 Herod taking to himself the honour due to God, is stricken by an angel, and dieth miserably—24 After his death the word of God prospereth.

**N**OW about that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church.

2 And he killed James the

## THE ACTS—CHAP. XII.

brother of John with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also. Then were the days of unleavened bread.

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep him; intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains; and the keepers before the door kept the prison.

7 And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 And the angel said unto him, Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals: and so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him; and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they

came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city; which opened to them of its own accord; and they went out and passed on through one street; and forthwith the angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent this angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark; where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knew Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened the door, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren

ren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 ¶ And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and, having made Blastus the king's chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their country was nourished by the king's country.

21 And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.

23 And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the spirit.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ministry, and took with them John, whose surname was Mark.

## CHAPTER XIII.

Paul and Barnabas are chosen to go to the Gentiles—14 Paul preacheth at Antioch, that Jesus is Christ—42 The Gentiles believe—45 But the Jews gainsay and blaspheme—46 Whereupon they turn to the Gentiles.

**N**OW there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

2 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Spirit said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 ¶ So they, being sent forth by the Holy Spirit, departed unto Seleucia; and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John to their minister.

6 And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Bar-jesus:

7 Who was with the deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man; who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer,

## THE ACTS—CHAP. XIII.

(for so is his name by interpretation,) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul, who also is called Paul, filled with the Holy Spirit, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou child of the evil spirit, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?

11 And now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John, departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue, on the sabbath day, and sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with his hand said,

Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with a high arm brought he them out of it.

18 And about the time of forty years suffered he their manners in the wilderness.

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he divided their land to them by lot.

20 And after that he gave unto them judges about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years.

22 And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king;

23 Of this man's seed hath God, according to his promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus:

24 When John had first preached before his coming the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom think ye that I am? I am not he. But, behold, there cometh one after me, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear.

26 Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you

feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre.

30 But God raised his spirit from the dead :

31 And he was seen many days of them who came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people.

32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again ; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

34 And as concerning that he raised his spirit up from the dead, he said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David.

35 For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, yielded up the spirit, and was laid unto his fathers.

36 All that believe in Jesus are justified by following his precepts.

37 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you, which is spoken of in the prophets ;

38 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish : for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.

39 And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath.

40 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas ; who speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

41 ¶ And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God.

42 But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

43 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you : but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

44 For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be

for salvation unto the ends of the earth.

45 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord :

46 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

47 But the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

48 But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium.

49 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Spirit.

#### CHAPTER XIV.

Paul and Barnabas are persecuted from Iconium—8 At Lystra Paul healeth a cripple, whereupon they are reputed as gods—19 Paul is stoned—21 They pass through divers churches, confirming the disciples in faith and patience—26 Returning to Antioch, they report what God had done with them.

**A**ND it came to pass in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Jews and also of the Greeks believed.

2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, who gave testimony unto the word of his grace,

and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided : and part held with the Jews, and part with the apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews with their rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them,

6 They were aware of it, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lieth round about :

7 And there they preached the gospel.

8 And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his birth, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speak : who steadfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter ; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then the priest of Jupiter, who was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

14 Who when the apostles

Barnabas and Paul, heard of, they ran in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, who made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein :

16 Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways.

17 Nevertheless he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness.

18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, from doing sacrifice unto them.

19 And there came thither certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who persuaded the people, and, having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had been dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city : and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lys-tra, and to Iconium, and Antioch.

22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith,

and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

23 And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia :

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God for the work which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

#### CHAPTER XV.

1 Great dissension ariseth touching circumcision—6 The apostles consult about it—22 And send their determination by letters to the churches—36 Paul and Barnabas, thinking to visit the brethren together, fall at strife, and depart asunder.

AND certain men who came down from Judca taught the brethren, and said Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that



Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles and elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees who believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the apostles and elders came together to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men and brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe.

8 And God, who knoweth their minds, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Spirit, even as he did unto us.

9 And put no difference between us and them, purifying their spirits by faith.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which

neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

11 But we believe that through the preaching of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved from sin, even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken unto me:

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets: as it is written,

16 After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up:

17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, who, from among the Gentiles, are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abstain from fornications, and from things strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day.

22 Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas : namely, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren :

23 And they wrote letters by them after this manner : The apostles, and elders, and brethren, send greeting, unto the brethren who are of the Gentiles in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia :

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain who went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law ; to whom we gave no such commandment.

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things.

29 That ye abstain from

meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch, and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle :

31 Which when they had read, they rejoiced for the consolation.

32 And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some days after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren in every city where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whose surname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder, one

from the other ; and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

# CHAPTER XVI.

Paul circumciseth Timothy, 7 and is called by the spirit from one country to another ; and a spirit of divination cast out—19 Paul and Silas scourged and imprisoned—25 The prison doors are opened—31 The jailor is converted, 37 and they are delivered.

**T**HEN came he to Derbe and Lystra : and, behold a certain disciple was there, named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman, who was a Jewess and believed ; but his father was a Greek :

2 Who was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him ; and took and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in those quarters ; for they all knew that his father was a Greek.

4 And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, that were ordained of the apostles and elders who were at Jerusalem.

5 And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were

forbidden of the Holy Spirit to preach the word in Asia.

7 After they were come to Mysia, they essayed to go into Bithynia : but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night : there stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia and help us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering that the Lord had called for us to preach the gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis ;

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony : and we were in that city abiding certain days.

13 And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made ; and we sat down, and spake unto the women who resorted thither.

14 ¶ And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple of the city of Thyatira, who worshipped God, heard us ; whose soul the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her household, she

besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us.

16 ¶ And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel possessed with a spirit of divination met us, who brought her masters much gain by soothsaying :

17 The same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, who shew unto us the way of salvation.

18 And this did she many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market-place unto the rulers,

20 And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men, being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our city,

21 And teach customs, which are not lawful for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romans.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them ; and the magistrates rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat them.

23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charg-

ing the jailer to keep them safely :

24 Who, having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God : and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken : and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thyself no harm : for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas.

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved ?

31 And they said, Believe in God, and thou shalt be saved.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes ; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

34 And when he had brought

them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the magistrates sent the serjeants, saying, Let these men go.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go : Now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romans, and have cast us into prison ; and now do they thrust us out privily ? nay verily ; but let them come themselves and fetch us out.

38 And the serjeants told these words unto the magistrates : and they feared, when they heard that they were Romans.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the city.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entered into the house of Lydia : and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

#### CHAPTER XVII.

Paul preacheth at Thessalonica—13 Being persecuted at Thessalonica. 15 he cometh to Athens, and disputeth, and preacheth the true God, to them unknown, 34 whereby some are converted.

**N**OW when they had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews :

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures.

3 Opening and alleging that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead ; and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them believed and consorted with Paul and Silas ; and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Jews who believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason and certain brethren unto the rulers of the city, crying, These that have turned the world upside down are come hither also ;

7 Whom Jason hath received : and these all do contrary to the decrees of Ccsar, saying, that there is another king, one Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the others, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren im-

mediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them believed; also of honourable women who were Greeks, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.

14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to go, as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens: and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city mostly given to idolatry.

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoics, encountered him. And some said, What

will this babbler say? others said, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection:

19 And they took him and brought him unto Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean.

21 For the Athenians and strangers who were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to hear some new thing.

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

24 God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands;

25 Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed anything, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things;

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determin-

## THE ACTS—CHAP. XVIII.

ed the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation ;

27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us.

28 For in him we live and move and have our being ; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at ; but now commandeth all men every where to repent :

31 He will judge the world in righteousness by the words of that man whom he hath ordained ; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised his spirit from the dead.

32 And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked ; and others said, We will hear thee again of this matter,

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit certain men clave unto him, and believed : among whom were Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

35 All sins and transgressions of every kind must receive their reward.

### CHAPTER XVIII.

Paul laboureth with his hands, and preacheth at Corinth to the Gentiles —9 The Lord encourageth him in a vision—18 Afterwards passing from city to city he strengtheneth the disciples—28 Preacheth Christ with great efficacy.

**A**FTER these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth ;

2 And found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome,) and to come unto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought : for by their occupation they were tent makers.

4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads ; I am clean : from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

7 ¶ And he departed thence and entered into a certain man's house, named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joined hard to the synagogue.

8 And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on

the Lord with all his house ; and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.

9 Then spake the Lord by a spirit to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace :

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to hurt thee : for I have many people in this city.

11 And he continued there a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgment seat,

13 Saying, This fellow persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong or wicked lewdness, O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you :

15 But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, look ye to it ; for I will be no judge of such matters.

16 And he drove them from the judgment seat.

17 Then the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment seat. And Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the

brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila ; having shorn his head in Cenchrea : for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there : but he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not ;

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh in Jerusalem : but I will return again unto you, if God will. And he sailed from Ephesus.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone up, and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed, and went over all the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord ; and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John.

26 And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue : whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto



## THE ACTS—CHAP. XIX.

him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him : who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace :

28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the Scriptures that Jesus was Christ.

### CHAPTER XIX.

The Holy Ghost is given through the laying on of Paul's hands—9 The Jews blaspheme his doctrine—13 The Jewish exorcists are overcome and wounded—19 Books are burnt—24 Demetrius, for love of gain, raiseth an uproar against Paul.

**A**ND it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus ; and finding certain disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Spirit since ye believed ? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Spirit.

3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized ? And they said, Unto John's baptism.

4 Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him who should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Spirit came on them ; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three months, disputing and persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

9 But when divers were hardened, and believed not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the school of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two years ; so that they who dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And the Spirit wrought wonders by the hands of Paul :

12 So that they brought unto Paul handkerchiefs and aprons from those who were sick, and the diseases departed from them, and from those who were possessed with evil spirits and they went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them who had evil spirits in the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, who did so.

15 And the evil spirits an-

swered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?

16 And the men in whom the evil spirits were, prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house.

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

18 And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many of them also who used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministered unto him, Timotheus and Erastus; but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith, who made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftsmen;

25 Whom he called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth.

26 Moreover ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath persuaded and turned away many people, saying that they be no gods, which are made with hands.

27 So that not only this our craft is in danger to be set at nought; but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the city was filled with confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entered in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Asia, who were his friends, sent unto him, desiring him that he would not adventure himself into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused; and the more part knew not

wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckoned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours cried out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the town clerk had appeased the people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, and of the image which fell down from Jupiter?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, who are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftsmen who are with him, have a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies: let them implead one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a lawful assembly.

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this day's uproar, there being no cause whereby we may give

an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

## CHAPTER XX.

Paul goeth to Macedonia—7 He celebrateth the Lord's supper—17 At Miletus he calleth the elders together, telleth them what shall befall himself—32 Commendeth them to God—36 Prayeth with them and goeth his way.

AND after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three months. And when the Jews laid wait for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius, of Derbo, and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before tarried for us at Troas.

6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the days of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas in five days; where we abode seven days.

7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the mor-

row; and continued his speech until midnight.

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man, named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep; and as Paul was long preaching he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up for dead.

10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him said, Trouble not yourselves, for his life is in him.

11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And we went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul; for Paul had a mind to go afoot:

14 And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day over against Chios; and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium; and the next day we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it

were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them, Ye know, from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humility of mind, and with many tears, and temptations, which befell me by the lying in wait of the Jews:

20 And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now, behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Save that the Holy Spirit witnesseth in every city, saying that bonds and afflictions abide me.

24 But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, in the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now, behold, I know that ye all, among whom I

have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over which the Holy Spirit hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God,

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous spirits enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

30 Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

32 And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them who are sanctified.

33 I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel.

34 Yea, ye yourselves know, that these hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to those who were with me.

35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words

of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give than to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they wept and kissed him,

38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

#### CHAPTER XXI.

Paul went to Jerusalem—21 Paul cometh to Jerusalem—27 where he is apprehended, and in great danger—32 but by the chief captain is rescued, and permitted to speak to the people.

AND it came to pass, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a straight course unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara:

2 And finding a ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to unlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

5 And when we had accomplished those days, we departed and went our way; and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the city:

## THE ACTS—CHAP. XXI.

and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship ; and they returned home again.

7 And when we had finished our course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Cesarea ; and we entered into the house of Philip the evangelist, who was one of the seven ; and abode with him.

9 And the same man had four daughters, virgins, who did prophesy.

10 And as we tarried there many days, there came down from Judea a certain prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, Thus saith the Holy Spirit, So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard these things, both we, and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What mean ye to weep and to break my soul ? for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.

14 And when he would not

be persuaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those days we went up to Jerusalem.

16 There went with us also certain of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 And the day following Paul went in with us unto James ; and all the elders were present.

19 And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are who believe ; and they are all zealous of the law :

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews who are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs.

22 What is it therefore ? the multitude must needs come together : for they will hear that thou art come.

23 Do therefore this that we say to thee : We have four men who have a vow on them ;

24 Them take, and purify

## THE ACTS—CHAP. XXI.

thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave their heads: and all may know that those things, whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing; but that thou thyself also walkest orderly, and keepest the law.

25 As touching the Gentiles who believe, we have written and concluded that they observe no such thing, save only that they keep themselves from things offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himself with them entered into the temple, to signify the accomplishment of the days of purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them.

27 And when the seven days were almost ended, the Jews who were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, help: This is the man, that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place: and further brought Greeks also into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 For they had seen before with him in the city Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple.

30 And all the city was mov-

ed, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jerusalem was in an uproar:

32 Who immediately took soldiers and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they saw the chief captain and the soldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near, and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle.

35 And when he came upon the stairs, so it was, that he was borne of the soldiers for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek?

28 Art not thou that Egyptian who before these days madest an uproar, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men who were murderers?

39 But Paul said, I am a man who am a Jew of Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city : and. I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him license, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckoned with the hand unto the people. And when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

# CHAPTER XXII.

Paul declareth how he was converted

—22 At the very mentioning of the Gentiles, the people exclaim against him—24 He would have been scourged—25 but, claiming the privilege of a Roman, he escapeth.

**M**EN, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence which I make now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence : and he saith,)

3 I am verily a man who am a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.

4 And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

5 As also the high priest doth bear me witness, and all the estate of the elders : from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them

who were there bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to pass, that, as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me ?

8 And I answered, Who art thou, Lord ? And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with me saw indeed the light, and were afraid : and they heard the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord ? And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus ; and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews who dwelt there,

13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked up upon him.

14 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his



## THE ACTS—CHAP. XXII.

will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, calling on the name of the Lord.

17 And it came to pass, that, when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance;

18 And saw him, and he said unto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned and beat in every synagogue them that believed on thee:

20 And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

21 And he said unto me, Depart: for I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and then lifted up their voices, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth; for it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they cried out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the air,

24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bade that he should be examined by scourging; that he might

know wherefore they cried so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, Is it lawful for you to scourge a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned?

26 When the centurion heard that, he went and told the chief captain, saying, Take heed what thou doest; for this man is a Roman.

27 Then the chief captain came, and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Roman? He said, Yea.

28 And the chief captain answered, With a great sum obtain I this freedom. And Paul said, But I was free born.

29 Then straightway they departed from him who should have examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid, after he knew that he was a Roman, and because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, because he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their council to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

### CHAPTER XXIII.

As Paul pleadeth his cause Ananias commandeth them to smite him—

11 God encourageth him—14 The Jews laying wait for Paul—20 Is declared unto the chief captain—27 He sendeth him to Felix the governor.

AND Paul, earnestly holding the council, said,

## THE ACTS—CHAP. XXIII.

Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day.

2 And the high priest Ananias commanded them who stood by him to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall : for sittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law ?

4 And they that stood by said, Revilest thou God's high priest ?

5 Then said Paul, I wist not, brethren, that he was the high priest : for it is written, Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, Men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee : of the hope and resurrection of the dead I am called in question.

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees : and the multitude was divided.

8 For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit : but the Pharisees confess both.

9 And there arose a great cry : and the scribes that were of the Pharisees' part arose, and strove, saying, We find no evil in this man : but if a spirit or an angel hath

spoken to him, let us not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain, fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following the spirit stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul : for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more than forty who had made this conspiracy.

14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound ourselves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the council signify to the chief captain that he bring him down unto you to-morrow, as though ye would inquire something more perfectly concerning him : and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Paul's sister's son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entered into the castle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said, Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said, Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aside privately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, the Jews have agreed to desire thee that thou wouldst bring down Paul to-morrow into the council, as though they would inquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yield unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them more than forty men, who have bound themselves with an oath, that they will not eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chief captain then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and

spear-men two hundred, at the third hour of the night;

24 And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe unto Felix the governor.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner:

26 Claudius Lysias unto the most excellent governor Felix sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Roman.

28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council:

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers also to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle:

33 Who, when they came to Cesarea, and delivered the epistle to the governor, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the governor

had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia ;

35 I will hear thee, said he, when thy accusers are also come. And he commanded him to keep in Herod's judgment hall.

#### CHAPTER XXIV.

Paul being accused by Tertullus the orator—10 Answereth for his life and doctrine—24 He preacheth Christ to the governor and his wife—26 The governor hopeth for a bribe—27 At last he leaveth Paul in prison.

**A**ND after five days Ananias the high priest descended with the elders, and with a certain orator named Tertullus, who informed the governor against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietness, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence,

3 We accept it always, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulness.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes :

6 Who also hath gone about to profane the temple : whom we took, and would have

judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee : by examining of whom thyself mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governor had beckoned unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully answer for myself :

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that there are yet but twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city :

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confess unto thee, that after the way which they call heresy, so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and in the prophets :

15 And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the Spirit, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many years I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings.

18 Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had aught against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stood before the council,

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them: touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and said, When Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let him have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister or come unto him.

24 And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment, Felix trembled, and

answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftener, and communed with him.

27 But after two years Porcius Festus came into Felix' room: and Felix, willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

## CHAPTER XXV.

The Jews accuse Paul before Festus—

8 He answereth for himself—11 and appealeth unto Cesar—14 Afterwards Festus openeth his matter to King Agrippa—13 and he is brought forth—15 Festus cleareth him to have done nothing worthy of death.

**N**OW when Festus was come into the province, after three days he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem.

2 Then the high priest and the chief of the Jews informed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly thither.

5 Let them therefore, said he, who among you are able, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickedness in him.

6 And when he had tarried among them more than ten days, he went down unto Ce-

sarea; and the next day sitting on the judgment seat commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And when he was come, the Jews who came down from Jerusalem stood round about, and laid many, and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove.

8 While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all:

9 But Festus, willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesar's judgment seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar.

12 Then Festus, when he had conferred with the council, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go.

13 And after certain days king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had been

there many days, Festus declared Paul's cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgment against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die, before that he who is accused have the accusers face to face, and have license to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore, when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgment seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, who was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

20 And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserved unto the hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would also hear the man myself. To morrow, said he, thou shalt hear him.

## THE ACTS—CHAP. XXVI.

23 And on the morrow, when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entered into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the city, at Festus' commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men who are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and also here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that, after examination had, I might have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withal to signify the crimes laid against him.

### CHAPTER XXVI.

Paul, in the presence of Agrippa, declareth his life from his childhood—12 His conversion to his apostleship—24 Festus declareth him to be mad—28 Agrippa is almost persuaded to be a Christian. 31 The whole company pronounce Paul innocent.

**T**HEN Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thyself. Then

Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself :

2 I think myself happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for myself this day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews :

3 Especially because I know thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews : wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

4 My manner of life from my youth, who was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews ;

5 Who knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, that after the most straitest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers :

7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which hope's sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the spirit of the dead.

9 I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth

10 Which thing I also did in Jerusalem : and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority

from the chief priests; and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them.

11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

12 Whereupon as I went to Damascus with authority and commission from the chief priests,

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and them who journeyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things which I will show unto thee;

17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power

of Satan\* unto God, that they may receive an inheritance among them who are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision:

20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that his spirit should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thyself; much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus; but speak forth the words of truth and soberness.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am per-

\* Satan means an evil spirit or an opposer.



## THE ACTS—CHAP. XXVII.

suaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest.

28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not only thou, but also all that hear me this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose up, and the governor, and Bernice, and they who sat with them:

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed to Cesar.

### CHAPTER XXVII.

Paul shipping toward Rome—10 Foretelleth of the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not believed. 14 They are tossed with tempest 41 and suffer shipwreck—44 Yet all come safe to land.

**A**ND when it was determined that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus' band.

2 And entering into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to sail by the coasts

of Asia; one Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, a city of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy; and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the wind not suffering us, we sailed under Crete, over against Salmone;

8 And, hardly passing it, came unto a place which is called the Fair Havens; nigh whereunto was the city of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also of our lives.

11 Nevertheless the centurion believed the master and the owner of the ship, more

than those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, and there to winter; which is a haven of Crete, and lieth toward the southwest and northwest.

13 And when the south wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Crete.

14 But not long after there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not bear up into the wind, we let her drive.

16 And running under a certain island which is called Clauda, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirding the ship; and, fearing lest they should fall into the quicksands, struck sail, and so were driven.

18 And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightened the ship;

19 And the third day we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither sun nor stars in many days appeared, and no small tempest lay on us, all hope that we should be saved was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loss.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of any man's life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Cesar: and, lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee.

25 Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

26 For we must be cast upon a certain island.

27 But when the fourth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria, about midnight the shipmen deemed that they drew near to some country:

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the

boat into the sea, under colour as though they would have cast anchors out of the fore-ship.

31 Paul said to the centurion and to the soldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

32 Then the soldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on Paul, besought them all to take meat saying, This day is the fourth day that ye have tarried and continued fasting having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take some meat; for this is for your health: for there shall not any of you be harmed.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all; and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took some meat.

37 And we were in all in the ship two hundred threescore and sixteen souls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship by casting out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had taken up the anchors, they commit-

ted themselves unto the sea, and loosed the rudder bands, and hoisted up the mainsail to the wind, and made toward shore.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground; and the forepart stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the soldiers' counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out, and escape.

43 But the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept them from their purpose; and commanded that they who could swim should cast themselves first into the sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship. And so it came to pass, that we escaped all safe to land.

#### CHAPTER XXVIII

Paul after his shipwreck is kindly entertained by the barbarians—5 The viper on his hand hurteth him not—8 He healeth many diseases in the island—11 They depart towards Rome—24 After his preaching some were persuaded—30 Yet he preacheth there two years.

AND when we were escaped, then we knew that the island was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people shewed us no little kindness: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one, because of the present rain, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and

laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the barbarians saw the venomous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

5 And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly : but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a god.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius ; who received us, and lodged us three days courteously.

8 And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever and of a bloody flux : to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also, who had diseases in the island, came, and were healed :

10 Who also honoured us with many honours ; and when we departed, they laded us with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three months we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three days.

13 And from thence we fetched a compass, and came to Rhegium : and after one day the south wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli ;

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven days : and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii Forum, and the Three Taverns ; whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoner to the captain of the guard : but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself with a soldier that kept him.

17 And it came to pass, that after three days Paul called the chief of the Jews together : and when they were come together, he said unto them, Men and brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people, or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans :

18 Who, when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar ; not that I had aught to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see

you, and to speak with you : because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

21 And they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came shewed or spake any harm of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest : for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging ; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some believed those things which were spoken and some believed not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that he had spoken. Well spake the Holy Spirit by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers,

26 Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand ; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive ;

27 For the minds of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed ; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their spirits, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And he dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received those that came in unto him.

31 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

I, Paul, came in spirit, by the will and directions of God, and revised and corrected the Acts of the Apostles, and all of my writings in the New Testament, about eighteen hundred years after they were written. My writings in this book have not been understood, from different causes :

First, there was a great error in translation ; Second, the variations of the phrases of the times ; Third, some errors have found their way into this book by design.

These causes combined have led the readers of this book to form erroneous opinions of the sayings, doings, and writings of Christ and his Apostles. But as they stand corrected in this book, the reader will be better able to understand and comprehend the doctrines of Christ and his Apostles.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE  
TO THE  
ROMANS.

CHAPTER I

Paul's calling to preach—16 What his gospel is—18 God is displeased with all manner of sin

**P**AUL, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, separated unto the gospel of God,

2 Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy Scriptures,

3 Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was made of the seed of David according to the flesh ;

4 And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection of his spirit from the dead :

5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name :

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ :

7 To all who are in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints : Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his son, that without ceasing I make men-

tion of you always in my prayers ;

10 Making request, if by any means that I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God to come unto you,

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established ;

12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, (but was hindered hitherto,) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles.

14 I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians ; both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ : for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth ; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith : as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

## ROMANS—CHAP. II.

18 For the displeasure of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness ;

19 Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them ; for God hath shewed it unto them.

20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead ; so that they are without excuse :

21 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful ; but became vain in their imaginations.

22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became ignorant.

23 And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, through the lusts of their own minds, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves :

25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness ; full of envy, mur-

der, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers,

27 Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

28 Without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful :

29 Who, knowing the judgment of God, that they who commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

### CHAPTER II.

The impropriety of judging—9 Tribulation on those that do evil—13 Not the hearers of the law but the doers are justified.

**T**HEREFORE thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that condemnest : for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself ; for thou that judgest doest the same things.

2 But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them who commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them who do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the recompense of your deeds ?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and long-suffering ; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance ?

5 But, after thy hardness and impenitent heart, treasurest up

unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteousness of God ;

6 Who will render to every man according to his deeds .

7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour .

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doeth evil ;

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good :

11 For there is no respect of persons with God .

12 For as many as have sinned without law shall also be judged without the law ; and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law,

13 (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified .

14 For when the Gentiles, who have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves ;

15 Who shew the work of the law written in their minds, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another :)

16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ's word according to my gospel .

17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God,

18 And knowest his will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law ;

19 And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them who are in darkness,

20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, who hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law .

21 Thou therefore who teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal ?

22 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God ?

23 For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written .

24 For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law : but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision .

25 Therefore, if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision ?

26 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law ?

27 For he is not a Jew, who



## ROMANS—CHAP. III.

is one outwardly ; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh :

28 But he is a Jew, who is one inwardly ; and circumcision, is that of the mind, in the spirit, and not in the letter ; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

### CHAPTER III.

5 Many members in one body—9 Let love be without dissimulation—12 Rejoice in hope.

**I** BESEECH you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world : but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think ; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office :

5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith ;

7 Or ministry, let us wait on

our ministering ; or he that teacheth, on teaching ;

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation : he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity ; he that ruleth, with diligence ; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

9 Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil ; cleave to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love ; in honour of preferring one another ;

11 Not slothful in business ; fervent in spirit ; serving the Lord ;

12 Rejoicing in hope ; patient in tribulation ; continuing instant in prayer ;

13 Distributing to the necessity of saints ; given to hospitality.

14 Bless them who persecute you : bless, and curse not.

15 Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.

16 Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.

17 Recompose to no man evil of evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

19 Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath :

20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him ; if he thirst, give him drink :

21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

CHAPTER IV.

Be subject to higher powers—5 Render to all their due—Love worketh no ill to his neighbour.

**L**ET every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God : the powers that be are ordained of God.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God :

3 For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power ? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same :

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid ; for every act must bring its reward.

5 Render therefore to all their dues : tribute to whom tribute is due : custom to whom custom ; fear to whom fear ; honour to whom honour.

6 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another : for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

7 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery,\* Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet ;

\* St. Paul says that adultery was to worship any other God but the great spirit.—Ezekiel xxiii. 37.

and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

8 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour : therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

9 Let us walk honestly, as in the day ; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying :

10 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER V.

Him that is weak in the faith receive ye—4 Who are those that judgeth—5 Repenting of days—11 Let us not judge one another.

**H**IM that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations.

2 For one believeth that he may eat strong things : another, who is weak, eateth light food.

3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not ; and let not him who eateth not judge him that eateth : for God hath received him.

4 Who art thou that judgest another man's servant ? to his own master he standeth or falleth ; yea, he shall be holden up : for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day above another : another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind.

6 He that regardeth the day, doth regard it unto the Lord ; but he who regardeth not the

day, to the Lord he doth not regard it.

7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's.

9 For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God.

10 So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

11 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumblingblock or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.

12 I know, and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

13 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not him with thy meat.

14 Let not then your good be evil spoken of:

15 For the kingdom of heaven is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit.

16 For he that in these things serveth Christ is acceptable to God, and approved of men.

17 Let us therefore follow

after the things which make for peace, and things where-with one may edify another.

18 For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

19 It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

20 Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that which he alloweth.

#### CHAPTER VI.

He that is strong should bear the infirmities of the weak—30 Love of prayer.

**W**E then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves.

2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.

3 For even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me.

4 For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

5 Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be likeminded one toward another according to Christ Jesus:

6 That ye may with one

mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us, to the glory of God.

8 Now I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers :

9 And that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy ; as it is written, For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name.

10 And again he saith, Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people.

11 And again, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles ; and laud him, all ye people.

12 And again, Esaias saith, There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Spirit.

14 And I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

16 That I should be the

minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Spirit.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,

19 Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God ; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another man's foundation :

21 But as it is written, To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see ; and they that have not heard shall understand.

22 For which cause also I have been much hindered from coming to you.

23 But now having no more place in these parts and having a great desire these many years to come unto you ;

24 Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you : for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be

somewhat filled with your company.

25 But now I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain contribution for the poor saints who are at Jerusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in temporal things.

28 When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

29 And I am sure that, when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me;

31 That I may be delivered from them that do not believe (in Judea;) and that my service which I have for Jerusalem may be accepted of the saints;

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

CHAPTER VII.

1 to 6 Paul speaketh of female helpers  
—19 Wise to that which is good.

**I** COMMEND unto you Phebe our sister, who is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succorer of many, and of myself also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila, my helpers in Christ Jesus:

4 Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.

5 Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my well beloved Epenetus, who is the first fruits of Achaia unto Christ,

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellow prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias, my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane, our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them who are of Aristobulus' household.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet those who are of the household of Narcissus, who are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and

## ROMANS—CHAP. VII.

Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, who laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren who are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints who are with them.

16 Salute one another with a holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them who cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

18 For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own persons; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the minds of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

20 And the God of peace shall bruise opposers under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

21 Timotheus my workfellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you.

22 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

24 Now to him that is of power to establish you according to the gospel of Christ preached by me, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began,

25 But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith:

26 To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

---

† Written to the Romans from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe servant of the church at Cenchrea.

I, Paul, appeared in spirit, and do say that I wrote seven chapters, which are called Paul's Epistles to the Romans (as revised and corrected by me.)

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. I.

### THE FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

## CORINTHIANS.

#### CHAPTER I.

13 and 14 on baptizing.

**P**AUL, called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother.

2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours :

3 Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you ;

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge ;

6 Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you :

7 So that ye come behind in no gift ;

8 God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

9 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you ;

but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.

10 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them who are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.

11 Some saith, I am of Paul ; and I of Apollos ; and I of Cephas ; and I of Christ.

12 Is Christ divided ? was Paul crucified for you ? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul ?

13 I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius ;

14 Lest any should say that I had baptized in mine own name.

15 And I baptized also the household of Stephanas : besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

16 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel : not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

#### CHAPTER II.

Paul declareth that his preaching consisteth not in excellency of speech, or of man's wisdom, but in the power of God—6 The wisdom of God is revealed in the gospel.

**A**ND I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech or

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. III.

of wisdom declaring unto you the testimony of God.

2 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.

3 And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the spirit and of power :

4 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

5 Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect :

6 But we speak the wisdom of God even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory ;

7 Which none of the princes of this world knew : for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

8 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither hath it entered into the mind of man, who conceive the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

9 But God hath revealed them unto us by his spirits for the spirits searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

10 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him ? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but by the spirits.

11 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God ; that we might know the things

that are freely given to us of God.

12 Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Spirit teacheth ; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

13 But some men receive not the things of the spirit ; for they are foolishness unto them : neither do they know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

14 But he that is spiritual can judge of those things, yet he himself judgeth no man.

### CHAPTER III.

Paul speaketh unto them as unto babes and as carnal—5 He that planteth, and he that watereth, is nothing—9 Ministers are God's fellow workmen—11 Christ the only foundation—16 Men the temples of God, which must be kept holy.

**A**ND I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat : for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet weak : for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, ye have not the spirit but walk as men.

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul ; and another, I am of Apollos ; have ye the Holy Spirit ?

5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by



## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. IV.

whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

6 I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.

7 So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.

8 Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.

9 For we are labourers together for God: ye are God's husbandry.

10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;

13 Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by the fire of truth; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.

14 If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by the fire of truth.

16 Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him have the spirit of truth that he may be wise.

18 Therefore let no man glory in men: for all things are yours:

19 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours;

20 And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.

### CHAPTER IV.

Paul shows in what account ministers ought to be held—6 We have nothing which we have not received—14 Yet he urgeth them to follow him as their father in Christ.

**L**ET a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: yea, I judge not mine own self.

3 For I know nothing by myself; yet am I not hereby justified: but I am judged by the word of the Lord.

5 For who maketh thee to differ from another?

6 And what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. V.

if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

7 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you.

8 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

9 Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling-place;

10 And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it:

11 Being defamed, we entreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the offscouring of all things unto this day.

12 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you.

13 For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

14 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of Christ.

15 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in

Christ, as I teach every where in every church.

16 Now some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you.

17 But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know not the speech of them who are puffed up, but the power.

18 For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.

### CHAPTER V.

The Corinthians must not go to law with their brethren, especially before unbelievers—5 The unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of glory—8 Our bodies are the members of Christ, and temples of the Holy Spirit.

**D**ARE any of you, having a matter against another go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

2 But brother should not go to law with brothers.

3 Now there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? Why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded?

4 Nay, ye do wrong, and defraud, and that your brethren.

5 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit glory? Be not deceived: neither idolaters, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind.

6 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit glory.

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. VI.

7 And such were some of you : but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified by following the teachings of the Lord Jesus, and the Spirit of our God.

8 What! know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own.

9 For ye are bought with a price ; therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, who are God's.

### CHAPTER VI

Paul treateth of marriage and its duties—4 The believing partner is not to forsake the unbelieving—17 Every man must be content with his vocation—15 Concerning virgins.

**N**OW concerning the things whercof ye wrote unto me :

2 Let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband be kind to his wife, and also the wife unto the husband.

4 And the woman who hath a husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

5 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband.

6 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases : but God hath called us to peace.

7 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how

knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife from wrong faith.

8 But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk. And so ordain I in all churches.

9 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised. Is any called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

10 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

11 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

12 Art thou called being a servant? care not for it : but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

13 For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's freeman : likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ's servant.

14 Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

15 Now concerning virgins I have no commandment of the Lord : yet I give my judgment, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.

16 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present distress : I say, that it is good for a man so to be.

17 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek a wife.

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. VII.

18 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned ; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned.

19 But this I say, brethren, the time will come that they who have wives will be as though they had none ;

20 And they that weep, as though they wept not ; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not ; and they that buy, as though they possessed not ;

21 And they that use this world, as not abusing it ; for the fashion of this world passeth away.

22 And this I speak for your own profit ; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

23 The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth ; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will ; only in the Lord.

### CHAPTER VII.

To abstain from meats offered to idols—9 We must not abuse our Christian liberty, to the offence of our brethren—11 But must use our knowledge with charity.

**N**OW as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

3 As concerning, therefore, the eating of those things that

are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one : the great Spirit.

4 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, as there be gods many, and lords many ;

5 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and he in us.

6 Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge : for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour eat it as a thing offered unto an idol ; and their conscience being weak is defiled.

7 But meat commendeth us not to God : for neither, if we eat, are we the better ; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse.

8 But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling-block to them that are weak.

9 For if any man see thee who hast knowledge sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him who is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols ;

10 And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother be led into errors.

11 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against God.

12 Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. VIII.

standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

### CHAPTER VIII.

Paul sheweth his liberty, 7 and that the minister ought to live by the gospel—18 Preacheth the gospel of Christ without charge—20 Paul becometh all things to all men; neither offensive unto any—24 Our life is like unto a race.

**A**M I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord?

2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them that do examine me is this:

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

5 Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?

9 For it is written in the law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, this is written: that he who plougheth should plough in hope; and that he who thresheth in hope should be partaker of his hope.

11 If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your temporal things?

12 If others be partakers of this power over you, are not we rather? Nevertheless we have not used this power; but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

13 Do ye not know that they whominister about holy things live of the things of the temple? and they who wait at the altar are partakers with the altar?

14 Even so hath the Lord ordained that they who preach the gospel should live of the gospel.

15 But I have used none of these things: neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for it were better for me to die, than that any man should make my glorifying void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel!

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? Verily that, when I preach

the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

20 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law;

21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law.

22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

23 And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you,

24 Know ye not that they who run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain.

25 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible crown.

26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

27 But I keep my body under, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to

others, I myself should be a castaway.

#### CHAPTER IX.

The sacraments of the Jews are types 7 and their punishments examples for us—14 We must flee from idolatry—21 We must not make the Lord's table the table of feasting to our brethren.

**M**OREOVER, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea;

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea;

3 And did all eat the same spiritual meat;

4 And did all drink the same spiritual drink; for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. Christ is called the Rock, or Chief Corner, or Foundation Stone on which we are to build.

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

6 Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day about three thousand.\*

9 Neither let us tempt

\* Exodus xxxii.

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. IX.

Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.

10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things happened to them for example: and they are written for the admonition of those who shall live after us.

12 Wherefore let him who thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

14 Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

15 I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say.

16 O Israel! are not ye who eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

17 What say I then? that the idol is anything, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is anything?

18 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to evil spirits, and not to God; and I would not that ye should have fellowship with evil spirits.

19 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of evil spirits: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of evil spirits.

20 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he?

21 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience' sake:

22 For the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof.

23 If any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience' sake.

24 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience'; for the earth is the Lord's and the fulness thereof.

25 Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the other: for why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience?

26 For if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?

27 Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

28 Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God.

29 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be blessed.

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. X.

### CHAPTER X.

Paul reproveth them, because generally their meetings were not for the better, but for the worse—  
19 Lastly, he reminded them thereof.

**B**E ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

2 Now I praise you brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you.

3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.

4 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be divisions among you; and I partly believe it.

5 For there must be also heresies among you, that they who are approved may be made manifest among you.

6 When ye come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lord's supper.

7 For in eating, every one taketh before another his own supper: and one is hungry and another is drunken.

8 What! have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

9 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord

Jesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, took bread:

10 And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat this in remembrance of me.

11 After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, and said, As often as ye drink this cup, drink it in remembrance of me;

12 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death till he come in the spirit.

13 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup unworthily, shall receive to himself condemnation.

14 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

15 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh condemnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

16 For this cause many are weak in the faith among you.

17 For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

18 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

19 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.

20 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home; that ye come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.



## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XI.

### CHAPTER XL

Spiritual gifts differ—7 Yet all are to profit—8 And to that end are diversely bestowed—22 Now are we one body in Christ.

**N**OW concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to understand that no man, speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus accursed :

4 Now there are diversities of gifts from the spirits.

5 And there are differences of administrations.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God who worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the spirits is given to every man to profit withal.

8 For to one is given by the spirits the word of wisdom, to another the word of knowledge ;

9 To another faith by the spirits, to another the gifts of healing by the spirits ;

10 To another the working of wonders, to another prophecy, to another discerning of spirits, to another divers kinds of languages, to another the interpretation of languages.

11 But all these worketh for the glory of God ; for as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members

of that one body, being many, are one body :

12 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing ? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling ?

13 But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

14 Because the foot is not the hand, is it any less a part of the body ? because the ear is not the eye, is it any less a part of the body ?

15 But now are they any members, yet but one body.

16 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee : nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

17 Nay, much more those members of the body which seem to be more feeble are necessary :

18 And those members of the body which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour ; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness.

19 For our comely parts have no need ; but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked :

20 That there should be no schism in the body ; but that the members should have the same care one for another.

21 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it ; or one mem-

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XII.

ber be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

22 Now are we one body in Christ's doctrine.

23 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

24 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers?

25 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

26 But covet earnestly the best gifts.

### CHAPTER XII.

All gifts, how excellent soever, are nothing worth without charity—  
4 the praises thereof—13 It is greater than hope and faith.

**T**HOUGH I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up.

5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own,

is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil:

6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth.

7 Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

8 For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

9 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

10 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part: but then shall know even as also I am known.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three: but the greatest of these is charity—

### CHAPTER XIII.

Prophecy is commended and preferred by Paul before speaking with tongues—26 The true use of each is taught, 27 and the abuse reprov'd—34 Women are forbidden to speak in the church.

**H**AVE charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy.

2 For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XIII.

him ; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

3 But he that prophesieth speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in another tongue edifieth himself ; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied : for greater is he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine ?

7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped ?

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle ?

9 So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken ? for ye shall speak into the air.

10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, of

what use will his sound be to me.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.

15 What is it then ? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also : I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.

16 Else, when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest ?

17 For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than ye all :

19 Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, than by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in understanding : howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.

21 In the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people ; and yet for

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XIV.

all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not : but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them who believe.

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad ?

24 But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced.

25 And thus are the secrets of his mind made manifest : and so falling down on his face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.

26 How is it, then, brethren ? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying.

27 If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course ; and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church ; and let him speak to himself, and to God.

29 Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.

30 If anything be revealed

to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn and all may be comforted.

32 The prophets were controlled by the spirits of holy men.

33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

34 Let your women keep silence about the government of the church, but they are commanded to be under obedience to the rules and regulations of the church.

35 What ! came the word of God out from you ? or came it unto you only ?

36 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord.

37 But if any man be ignorant, let him learn.

38 Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.

39 Let all things be done decently and in order.

### CHAPTER XIV.

By Christ's resurrection -- 12 Paul proveth the certainty of our resurrection--25 The manner of the resurrection.

**M**OREOVER, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand ;

2 By which also ye are blessed, if ye keep in memory what I

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XIV.

preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain.

3 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died.

4 And was buried, and that his spirit rose and was seen the third day according to the Scriptures.

5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve :

6 After that he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once ; of whom the greater part remain unto this present.

7 After that, he was seen of James ; then of all the apostles.

8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am : and his grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain ; but I labored more abundantly than they all : yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.

11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.

12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead ?

13 But if there is no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen :

14 And if Christ is not ris-

en, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God ; because we have testified of God that he raised up Christ : whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised :

17 And if Christ is not raised, your faith is vain ;

18 Be not deceived : evil communications corrupt good manners.

19 Awake to righteousness, and sin not ; for some have not the knowledge of God : I speak this to your shame.

20 But some will say, How are the dead raised up ? and with what body do they come ?

21 That which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die :

22 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain :

23 But God giveth it a spiritual body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

24 All flesh is not the same flesh : but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

25 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial ? but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.

26 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XV.

moon, and another glory of the stars; for one star differeth from another star in glory.

27 So also is the resurrection from the dead. It is sown a corruptible body, it is raised a spiritual body.

28 It is sown in weakness, it is raised in power:

29 It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

30 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

31 When the body dies, from it the spirit shall be raised an incorruptible body.

32 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

33 The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

34 But thanks be to God, who giveth us the victory.

35 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord

### CHAPTER XV.

Paul exhorteth them to relieve the wants of the brethren at Jerusalem—10 Commendeth Timothy—13 And after friendly admonitions—19 Concludeth his epistle with divers salutations.

**N**OW concerning the collection for the saints, as

I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whosoever ye shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberality into Jerusalem.

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall pass through Macedonia: for I do pass through Macedonia.

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way; but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost.

9 For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you with the bre-

## I. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XV.

thren : but his will was not at all to come at this time ; but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the firstfruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints,)

16 That ye submit yourselves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us, and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus

and Achaicus : for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed my spirit and yours : therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you. Greet ye one another with a holy kiss.

21 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

23 The word of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

I, Paul, came in spirit, and do say that I wrote the fifteen chapters, called Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians, as revised and corrected by me.

## THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

## CORINTHIANS.

### CHAPTER I.

Paul the apostle encourageth them under troubles—12 And calling both his own conscience and theirs to witness of his sincere manner of preaching—15 He excuseth his not coming to them.

**P**AUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia :

2 Grace be to you, and peace

from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort ;

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them who are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. I.

consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we are afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer: or whether we are comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

7 And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, inasmuch that we despaired even of life:

9 But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God;

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us;

11 Ye also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed upon us by the means of many persons thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

12 For our rejoicing is this: the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly toward you.

13 For we write none other things unto you, than what ye

read or acknowledge; and I trust ye shall acknowledge even to the end;

14 As also ye have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoicing, even as ye also are ours.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that ye might have a second benefit,

16 And to pass by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightness? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay?

18 But as God is true, our word toward you was not yea and nay.

19 For the son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me and Silvanus and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now he who hath established us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God:

22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in us.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.



## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. III.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy ; for by faith ye stand.

### CHAPTER II.

Paul, having showed the reason why he came not to them—12 He declareth why he departed from Troas to Macedonia—14 And the happy success which God gave to his preaching in all places.

**B**UT I determined this with myself, that I would not come again to you in heaviness.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same who is made sorry by me ?

3 And I wrote this same unto you, lest, when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice : having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears ; not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part : that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many.

7 So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you that ye would confirm your love toward him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christ's gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord,

11 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother ; but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

12 Now thanks be unto God, who always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.

13 For we are not as many, who corrupt the word of God : but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

### CHAPTER III.

7 Paul compareth the ministration of the law and of the gospel—12 And proveth that his ministry is so far the more excellent, as the gospel of life and liberty is more glorious than the law of condemnation.

**D**O we begin to commend ourselves ? need or we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you ?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our minds, known and read of all men :

3 And such trust have we through Christ toward God :

4 Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think anything as of ourselves ; but our sufficiency is of God ;

## II. CORINTHIANS CHAP. IV.

5 Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament ; not of the letter, but of the spirit : for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

6 But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance ; which glory was to be done away.

7 Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech :

8 And not as Moses who put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not plainly see him.

9 And their minds were also blinded : for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the old testament ; which vail is done away in Christ.

10 But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their minds.

11 Nevertheless, when they shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

12 But we all, with open eyes beholding us in a glass the glorious condition of the holier spirits are changed into the same image from glory to glory.

### CHAPTER IV.

Paul declareth how he hath preached the gospel ; 7 and how persecutions did redound to the praise of God, 16 and to the apostle's own eternal glory.

**T**HEREFORE, seeing we have this ministry, as we

have received mercy, we faint not ;

2 But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully ; but, by manifestation of the truth, commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

3 For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord ; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake.

4 For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our spirits, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

5 We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed ; we are perplexed but not in despair ;

6 Persecuted, but not forsaken ; cast down, but not destroyed ;

7 Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

8 For we who live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake.

9 So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

10 We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken ; we also believe, and therefore speak :

11 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant love might through the thanks-

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. V.

giving of many redound to the glory of God.

12 For which cause we faint not ; but though our outward man will decay yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

13 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory ;

14 While we look not for the things which are seen, but for the things which are not seen : for the things which are seen are temporal ; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

### CHAPTER V.

He laboureth to keep a good conscience—12 not boast of himself—18 and by his ministry of reconciliation to reconcile others also in Christ God.

**F**OR we know that, if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2 For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven.

3 For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened :

4 Not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the selfsame thing is

God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

6 For we walk by faith, not by sight :

7 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

8 Wherefore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

9 For we must all receive for the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

10 Knowing therefore the goodness of the Lord, we persuade men ; but we are made manifest unto God ; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences.

11 For we commend not ourselves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that ye may have somewhat to answer them who glory in appearance, and not in spirit.

12 For the love of Christ constraineth us ;

13 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation ;

14 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself.

15 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us : we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. VII.

### CHAPTER VI.

He approveth himself as faithful, 4 and by patiently enduring all kinds of affliction and disgrace for the gospel; 14 he exhorteth them to flee the society and pollutions of idolators, as being themselves temples of the living God.

**W**E then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye receive not the blessings of God in vain.

2 (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)

3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed:

4 But in all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings;

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by long-suffering, by kindness, by the Holy Spirit, by love unfeigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left,

8 As unknown, and yet well known: as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed;

9 As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

10 O ye Corinthians, our

mouth is open unto you, our minds are enlarged.

11 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own spirit.

12 Now for a recompense in the same, (I speak as unto my children,) be ye also enlarged.

13 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

14 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

15 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

16 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean; and I will receive you,

17 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

### CHAPTER VII.

He exhorteth them to purity of life—3 the godly sorrow his former epistle had wrought in them—13 and of their loving kindness and obedience towards Titus.

**H**AVING therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. VII.

spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2 Receive us ; we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I speak not this to condemn you : for I have said before, that you are in our minds to die and live with you.

4 Great is my boldness of speech towards you, great is my glorying of you : I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in our tribulation.

5 For, when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side ; without were fightings, within were fears.

6 Nevertheless God, that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus ;

7 And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me ; so that I rejoiced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent : for I perceive that the same epistle hath made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance : for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might

receive damage by us in nothing.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of : but the sorrow of the world worketh evil.

11 For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal. In all things ye have approved yourselves to have been clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therefore, we were comforted in your comfort : yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed ; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting, which I made before Titus, is found a truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembereth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling ye received him.

16 I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. VIII.

### CHAPTER VIII.

He stirreth them up to a liberal contribution for the poor saints, 14 and by the spiritual profit that shall redound to themselves thereby.

**P**RAYING us with much entreaty that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints.

2 And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

3 Insomuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

4 Therefore, as ye abound in everything, in faith, and utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us, see that ye abound in this grace also.

5 I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love.

6 And herein I give my advice : for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be forward a year ago.

7 Now, therefore, perform the doing of it ; that as there was a readiness to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which ye have.

8 For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

9 For I mean not that other men be eased and ye burdened :

10 But by an equality, that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want ; that there may be equality :

11 As it is written, He that had gathered much had nothing over ; and he that had gathered little had no lack.

12 But thanks be to God, who put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

13 For indeed he accepted the exhortation ; but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

14 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel throughout all the churches :

15 And not that only, but who was also chosen of the churches to travel with us with this grace, which is administered by us to the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready mind :

16 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administered by us :

17 Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.

18 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which I have in you.

19 Whether any do inquire

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. IX.

of Titus, he is my partner and fellow helper concerning you : or our brethren be inquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.

20 Wherefore show ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

### CHAPTER IX.

He sent Titus and his brethren beforehand.—6 He exhorteth them to a bountiful alms, 10 which shall return a great increase to them—12 and occasion many thanksgivings unto God.

**F**OR as touching the ministering to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you :

2 For I know the forwardness of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal hath provoked very many.

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as I said, ye may be ready :

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, we (that we say not, ye) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand your bounty, whereof ye had notice before, that the

same might be ready, as a matter of bounty, and not as of covetousness.

6 But this I say, He who soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he who soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his mind, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work :

9 As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor; his righteousness remaineth for ever.

10 Now he that ministereth seed to the sower both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness :

11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifulness, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.

12 For the administration of this service not only supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God ;

13 While by the experiment of this ministration they glorify God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men ;

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. X.

the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

### CHAPTER X.

The apostle's spiritual powers—13, Paul excuseth himself boasting.

**N**OW I Paul myself beseech you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who in presence am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you :

2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present with that confidence, wherewith I think to be bold against some, who think of us as if we walked according to the flesh.

3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh :

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds:)

5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

6 And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust to himself that he is Christ's, let him of himself think this again, that, as he is Christ's, even so are we Christ's.

8 For though I should boast

somewhat more of our authority, which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction, I should not be ashamed.

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters :

10 For his letters, say they, are weighty and powerful; but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible :

11 Let such a one think this, that, such as we are in word by letters when we are absent, such will we be also in deed when we are present.

12 For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves; but they, measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.

13 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the rule which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

14 For we stretch not ourselves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you; for we are come as far as to you also in preaching the gospel of Christ :

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other men's labours; but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly,

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and



## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XI.

not to boast in another man's line of things made ready to our hand.

17 But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

18 For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

### CHAPTER XI.

Paul vindicates himself—7 and preacheth the gospel to them freely.

**W**OULD to God ye could bear with me a little in my folly : and indeed bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy : for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

4 For, if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or if he receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, well ye might not like his doctrines.

5 For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles.

6 Have I committed an offence because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely ?

7 I took wages of other churches to do you service.

8 And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was

chargeable to no man : for that which was lacking to me the brethren who came from Macedonia supplied : and in all things I have kept myself from being burdensome unto you, and so will I keep myself.

9 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them who desire occasion ; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

10 If a man bring you into bondage, if a man injure you, if a man take of you wrongfully, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face, he shall suffer.

11 I have been imprisoned and received many stripes.

12 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck.

13 In journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren ;

14 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and lack of clothing.

15 Beside those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

16 In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king, kept the city of the Damascenes with a garrison, desirous to apprehend me :

## II. CORINTHIANS—CHAP. XII.

17 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

### CHAPTER XII.

He threateneth severity, 5 and exhorteth sinners to self examination, 6 and to a reformation of life—9 He concludeth his epistle with a general exhortation and a salutation.

**T**HIS is the third time I am coming to you. In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

2 I told you before, and foretell you, as if I were present, the second time; and being absent now I write to them who heretofore have sinned, and to all others, that, if I come again, I will not spare:

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God. For we also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by

the power of God toward you.

5 Examine yourselves, whether ye are in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, and how the doctrines of Christ are within you.

6 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest.

7 For we wish to do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

8 For we are glad, when ye are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection.

9 Finally, brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

10 Greet one another with a holy kiss.

11 All the saints salute you.

12 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit be with you all. Amen.

I, Paul, came in spirit and do say that I wrote twelve chapters, called Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, as revised and corrected by me.

## THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE GALATIANS.

### CHAPTER I.

Paul marvelleth that they are so soon turned to another gospel.—11 He learned the gospel not of men, but of God: 13 and sheweth what he was before his calling, 17 and what he did presently after it.

**P**AUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ, and God the Fa-

ther, who raised his spirit from the dead;

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia:

3 Grace be to you, and peace, from God the Father and from our Lord Jesus Christ,

## GALATIANS—CHAP. II.

4 Who was an example for us that he might deliver us from evil according to the will of God our Father :

5 To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel :

7 Which is not another ; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, harken not unto him.

9 But I certify to you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not from man.

10 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

11 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews' religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it :

12 And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

13 But when it pleased God to reveal his Son in me,

14 That I might preach him among the heathen, immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood :

15 Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them who were

apostles before me ; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

16 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days.

17 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James, Christ's brother.

18 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.

19 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia ;

20 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea which were in Christ :

21 But they had heard only, That he who persecuted us in times past now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

22 And they glorified God through my preaching.

### CHAPTER II.

He sheweth when and for what purpose he went up again to Jerusalem ; 3 that Titus was not circumcised ; 11 and that he withstood Peter for his dissimulation.

**T**HEN fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them who were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain.

3 But Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised :

4 And that, because of false

brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage :

5 But of those who seemed to be somewhat, whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me : God accepteth no man's person : for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me :

6 But, contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter ;

7 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles ;)

8 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship ; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

9 Only they would that we should remember the poor ; the same which I also was forward to do.

10 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

11 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles : but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them who were of the circumcision.

12 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him ; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

13 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews ?

14 We who are Jews by nature and not Gentiles.

### CHAPTER III.

He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and depend upon the law ?

6 They that believe are justified. 9 and blessed with Abraham :—10 and this he sheweth by many reasons.

**O** FOOLISH Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you ?

2 This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith ?

3 He, therefore, that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh wonders among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith ?

4 Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.

5 Know ye therefore that they who are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

6 And the spirits, foreseeing

that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed.

7 So then they who are of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham.

8 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith, with good work.

9 And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them.

10 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the spirits through faith.

11 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.

12 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made.

13 And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

14 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

15 Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and

it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

16 Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one.

17 But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

18 But before faith came, we were kept under the law which should afterwards be revealed.

19 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified through faith by good works.

20 For ye are all the children of God.

21 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

22 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

23 And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

#### CHAPTER IV.

We were under the law till Christ came, as the heir is under his guardian till he be of age. 5 But Christ freed us from the law: 7 therefore we are no longer servants to it, 10 and sheweth that we are Abraham's seed according to the promise.

**N**OW I say, that the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all;

2 But is under tutors and

governors until the time appointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world :

4 But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth Jesus to preach repentance.

5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the spirit of his Son into your souls, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son ; and if a son, then an heir of God with Christ.

8 It is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.

9 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law ?

10 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a free woman.

11 But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh ; but he of the free woman was by promise.

12 Which things are an allegory : for these are the two covenants ; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

13 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

14 But Jerusalem which is

above is free, which is the mother of us all.

15 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

16 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the spirit, even so it is now.

17 Nevertheless what saith the Scripture ? Cast out the bondwoman and her son : for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the free woman.

18 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

#### CHAPTER V.

He chargeth them to stand fast in their liberty : 9 but rather to love one another, which is the sum of the law. 13 Errors of the world, 14 and the fruits of the Spirit, 16 and exhorteth to walk in the Spirit.

**STAND** fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith and good works.

3 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision ; but faith which worketh by love.

4 Ye did run well ; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth ?

5 This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you.

6 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

7 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will

be none otherwise minded : but he that troubleth you shall receive his reward, whosoever he is.

8 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased.

9 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty ; only use not your liberty for an occasion to do evil, but by love serve one another.

10 For all the law is fulfilled in one sentence, even in this ; Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.

11 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. But if ye are lead by the Spirit ye are not under the law.

12 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye will not be led into the errors of the world, which are

13 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like : of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they who do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of glory.

14 But the fruit of the holy spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

15 Meekness, temperance : against such there is no law.

16 If we live in the spirit, let us walk in the spirit.

17 Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking or envying one another.

# CHAPTER VI

He exhorteth them to deal mildly with an offending brother, 2 to bear one another's burden ; 7 and not weary in well doing.—10 He sheweth what they intend that preach circumcision.

**B**RETHREN, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye who are spiritual shall restore such a one in the spirit of meekness ; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.

3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.

4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another.

5 For every man shall bear his own burden.

6 Be not deceived ; God is not mocked : for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap ; but he that soweth to the spirit shall of the spirit reap a blessing.

7 And let us not be weary in well doing : for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

8 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto those who are of the household of faith.

9 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.

10 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to the circumcision ; lest they should suf-

for persecution for the cross of Christ.

11 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

12 But I will glory in the doctrine of Christ.

13 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any-

thing, nor uncircumcision, but a life of righteousness.

14 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

15 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits. Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians written from Rome.

I, Paul, came in the spirit, and revised and corrected this Epistle to the Galatians about eighteen hundred years after I wrote them.

## THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

## EPHESIANS.

### CHAPTER I.

After salutation, and thanksgiving for the Ephesians—10 wherefore he prayeth that they may come to the full knowledge and possession of this salvation.

**P**AUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints who are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus:

2 Blessings be to you, and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

4 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will.

5 In whom also we have obtained an inheritance.

6 In whom ye also trusted,

after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also, after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise,

7 Wherefore also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,

8 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

9 That the God, of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

10 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what are the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,



## EPHESIANS—CHAP. III

11 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

12 Which he wrought through Christ, who also raised his spirit from the dead.

### CHAPTER II.

He sheweth our state by nature, and God's great mercy in our deliverance—10 no more strangers—11 built upon the foundation.

**A**ND you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins ;

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world the spirits that now worketh in the children of disobedience :

3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, lusting after the riches and honours of this world.

4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5 Even when we are dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, and he will exalt us according to our work, and by love and good works ye shall enter the kingdom of glory.

6 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

7 But now, in Christ Jesus, ye who sometime were far off are made nigh by faith in Christ,

8 Who came and preached peace to you who were afar

off, and to those who were nigh.

9 For through him we both have access by the Spirits unto the Father.

10 Now, therefore, ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God ;

11 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, and of Jesus Christ, the chief corner-stone,

12 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto a holy temple in the Lord :

13 In whom ye also are builded together for a habitation to God through the Spirit.

### CHAPTER III.

1 to 9 Mysterious mystery—riches of Christ—the love of God.

**F**OR this cause, I Paul, am prisoner for preaching the gospel of Jesus Christ, for you Gentiles,

2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward :

3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery ; as I wrote afore in few words ;

4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ,

5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the spirits.

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow heirs with us and partakers of his promise in Christ through the gospel :

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God, given unto me by the effectual working of his power.

8 Unto me also is this blessing given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ ;

9 And that all men may see the mysteries of the love of God,

10 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by faith of him.

11 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is for your glory.

12 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

13 From whom the whole family both in heaven and in earth come,

14 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man ;

15 That Christ may dwell in your spirits by faith ; that ye may be rooted and grounded in love ;

16 And may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height of the love of God.

17 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled

with all the fulness of God.

18 Now, unto him that is able to do, abundantly above all that we ask or think,

19 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

#### CHAPTER IV.

He exhorteth to unity, 5 and declareth that God giveth divers gifts unto men, in order that his church might be edified—17 He calleth them from impurity, 18 to put on the new man, 19 to cast off lying, and corrupt communication.

**I** THEREFORE, am prisoner for preaching the gospel of Christ, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation where with ye are called.

2 With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love ;

3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace.

4 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

5 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

6 And he gave some, apostles ; and some, prophets ; and some, evangelists ; and some, pastors and teachers ;

7 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the church of Christ :

8 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God,

unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ :

9 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftinss, whereby they lie in wait to deceive.

10 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ :

11 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

12 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

13 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their minds :

14 But ye have not so learned Christ ;

15 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus :

16 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts : for intemperance and for the wealth and honours of this life.

17 And be ye renewed in the spirit of your mind ;

18 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

19 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour : for we are members one of another.

20 If ye be not angry,

21 Neither give ye place to the evil spirits.

22 Let him that stole steal no more : but rather let him labour, working with his hands the things which are good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

23 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

24 And grieve not the Holy Spirits.

25 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice :

26 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, loving one another, even as God loves you.

#### CHAPTER V.

He exhorteth them to walk in love, to flee all uncleanness, 5 to have no fellowship with the works of darkness, 15 to walk as wise, 18 and to be filled with the Spirit—22 He sheweth how Wives ought to obey their husbands, 25 and how Husbands ought to love their wives.

**B**E ye therefore followers of God, as dear children ;

2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us.

3 But all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be among you for it does not become christians ;

4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not proper : but rather prayer and giving of thanks.

5 Let no man deceive you with vain words :

6 For because of these things cometh the displeasure of God upon the children of disobedience.

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometime in darkness, but now are ye in the light which cometh from God : walk as children of light ;

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth ;

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are reprov'd are made manifest by the light : for whatsoever doth make manifest is light.

14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from your condition and Christ will give thee light.

15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise.

16 Redeeming your time because your deeds were evil.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess ; but be filled with the spirit of truth ;

19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your hearts to the Lord ;

20 Giving thanks unto God the Father for the blessings we enjoy.

21 Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

22 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

23 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church.

24 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing as of water by the word,

25 That he might present it to God a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing ; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

26 So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies.

27 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh ; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church :

28 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be as one flesh.

29 I would here also com-

## EPHESIANS—CHAP. VI.

pare the church to man and wife.

30 Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

### CHAPTER VI.

The duty of children towards their parents; 5 of servants towards their masters. 10 Our life is a warfare, 12 not only against flesh and blood, but also against spiritual enemies. 13 The complete armour of a Christian, 18 and how it ought to be used. 21 Tychicus is commended.

**C**HILDREN. obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise;

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.

4 And, ye parents, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with cheerfulness and a willing mind.

6 Not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but as the servants of God, doing his will from the spirit;

7 With good will doing service.

8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing a man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And, ye masters, be kind unto your servants: knowing

that you have a master also in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand temptations.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness;

15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

16 And also take the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

18 Praying always in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, so that ye may not be led astray from the love of God.

19 And pray for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the blessings of the gospel,

20 For which I am an ambassador in bonds; that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

21 But that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, Tychicus, a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, will make known to you.

22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your minds.

23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Joy and peace be with all them who love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. Amen.

1, Paul, wrote the six chapters called the Epistle to the Ephesians, and came in spirit and revised and corrected them about eighteen hundred years after I wrote them.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

### CHAPTER I

He testifieth his thankfulness to God. 9 daily praying for love. 22 Paul's desire to be with Christ. 26 He exhorteth them to unity, and to fortitude in persecution.

**P**AUL, the servant of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus who are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:

2 Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I thank my God upon every remembrance of you.

4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy,

5 For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he who hath begun a good work in you will perform it.

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my mind; inasmuch as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my joy.

8 For God knoweth how I long after you all.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment;

10 That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence.

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by

Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel;

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places;

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will:

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

18 What then? notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

19 According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness I will preach Christ.

20 While I live I will preach Christ, but to die is gain for me.

21 But while I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not.

22 For I have a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:

23 Nevertheless, for me to

abide in the flesh is more needful for you.

24 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all for your furtherance and joy of faith.

25 That your rejoicing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me by my coming to you again.

26 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel;

27 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

28 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

29 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and is now in me.

#### CHAPTER II.

He exhorteth them to unity, and to all humbleness of mind; 7 to a careful proceeding in the way of salvation, that they be as lights in the world.

**I**F there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit,

2 Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.

3 Let nothing be done through

strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem others better than themselves.

4 But be as Christ, who made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant.

5 He humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

6 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him.

7 Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation:

8 For it is God who worketh in you both to will and to do of his own good pleasure.

9 Do all things without murmurings and disputings:

10 That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without sin, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world;

11 Holding forth the word of truth; that I may rejoice that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

12 Yea, and if I be offered upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy and rejoice with you all.

13 For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoice with me.

14 But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.

15 For I have no man like-

minded, who will naturally care for your state.

16 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's.

17 But ye know the proof of Timotheus, that, as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.

18 Him, therefore, I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

19 But I trust in the Lord that I also myself shall come shortly.

20 Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow labourer, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants.

21 For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick.

22 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

23 I sent him, therefore, the more carefully, that when ye see him again ye may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful.

24 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness; and hold such in reputation:

25 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life, to supply your lack of service toward me.



## PHILIPPIANS—CHAP. III.

### CHAPTER III.

He warneth them to beware of false teachers of the circumcision; 7 but that he counteth all things as loss to gain Christ and his righteousness; 10 acknowledging his own imperfection. 14 He exhorteth them to be thus minded.

**F**INALLY. my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we who are of the circumcision, who worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus,

4 Were circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee;

5 I zealously persecuted the church, touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

6 But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.

7 Yea, doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of many things, but do count them as nothing, that I may preach the gospel of Christ,

8 And be found in me, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

9 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect:

10 But I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

11 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

12 I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

13 Let us, therefore, as many as are perfect, be thus minded: and if in anything ye are otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

14 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.

15 Brethren, be followers together of Christ, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample.

16 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ:

17 Whose end is trouble, whose God is their food, and who glory in that of which they ought to be ashamed, and mind vain things.)

18 But our conversation is about heaven; from whence also we look for the Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ.

## PHILIPPIANS—CHAP. IV.

### CHAPTER IV.

From particular admonitions 4 he proceedeth to general exhortations—10 showing how he rejoiced at their liberality—19 And so he concludeth with prayer and salutations.

**T**HEREFORE, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.

3 And I entreat thee also, true yokefellow, help those women who laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow labourers.

4 Rejoice in the Lord always: and again I say, Rejoice.

5 Be careful in everything, and by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving,

6 Let your requests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your minds through Christ Jesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think of these things and do them.

9 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me hath flourished again; wherein ye were also

careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

10 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever condition I am, therewith to be content.

11 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: everywhere and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

12 Notwithstanding, ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

13 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel,

14 When I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.

15 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity.

16 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

17 But I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.

18 But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory.

19 Now, unto God our Father be glory forever and ever. Amen.

20 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren who are with me greet you,

## COLOSSIANS—CHAP. I.

21 All the saints salute you, chiefly they who are of Cesar's household.

22 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

I, Paul, wrote the four chapters called Paul's Epistles to the Philippians, and came in spirit about eighteen hundred years after I wrote them, and revised and corrected them.

### THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

### COLOSSIANS.

#### CHAPTER I.

After salutation he thanketh God for their faith—7 confirmeth the doctrine of Epaphras—9 prayeth further for their increase in grace.

**P**AUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God,  
2 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ who are at Colosse : Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying for you,

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints,

5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel ;

6 Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world ; and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the love of God in truth :

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow servant,

who is for you a faithful minister of Christ ;

-8 Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do pray for you, and desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding ;

10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all, pleasing churches, and being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God ;

11 Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness ;

12 Giving thanks unto the Father, who hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light :

13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness :

14 If ye continue in the faith-grounded and settled, and be

not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to you; whereof I Paul am made a minister;

15 Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church:

16 Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God which is given to me for you, to fulfil the word of God;

17 Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints:

18 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles;

19 Whom we preach, warning the people in wisdom;

20 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

#### CHAPTER II.

He still exhorteth them to be constant in Christ—6 to beware of philosophy and vain traditions, communing with angels—15 ordinances, why are ye subject to them?

**F**OR I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh;

2 That their spirits might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God,

and of the Father, and of Christ;

3 For though I am absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the steadfastness of your faith in Christ.

4 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him:

5 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

6 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, and after the rudiments of the world, and not after the teachings of Christ.

7 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins by the circumcision of Christ:

8 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised his spirit from the dead.

9 And you, being dead in your sins, hath he quickened together with him,

10 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

11 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

12 Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of a holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days :

13 Which are a shadow of things to come ; but the body is Christ.

14 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility of communing with spirits and angels.

15 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, after the commandments and doctrines of men ? .

16 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body ; not in any honour but to the satisfying of the flesh.

#### CHAPTER III.

He sheweth where we should seek Christ—5 Lie not one to another—14 Wives submit to your own husbands—18 Servants obey your masters.

**I**F ye then be followers of Christ, seek those things which are above.

2 Set your affections on things above, in preference to things on the earth.

3 For ye are dead to this world, and your life is with Christ in glory.

4 But now ye also put off all these ; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

5 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds ;

6 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created you :

7 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free :

8 Put on therefore, as the followers of God, holy and beloved spirit of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering ;

9 Forbearing one another, and loving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any : even as Christ loves you, so also do ye.

10 And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness.

11 And let the peace of God rule in your spirits, to the which also ye are called in one body ; and be ye thankful.

12 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom ; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with love in your souls to the Lord.

13 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the spirit of God, giving thanks to him.

14 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

15 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

16 Children, obey your parents : for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

17 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

18 Servants, obey your masters according to the flesh ; not with eye service, as men pleasers ; but in singleness of spirit, fearing God :

19 And whatsoever ye do, do it cheerfully, as to the Lord, and not unto men ;

20 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance : if ye serve the Lord.

21 But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done : and there is no respect of persons.

#### CHAPTER IV.

He exhorteth them to be fervent in prayer—5 To walk wisely toward them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ—10 He saluteth them, and wisheth them all prosperity.

**M**ASTERS, give unto your servants that which is just and equal ; knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving :

3 Withal, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds.

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be always with love and wisdom, that ye

may know how ye ought to answer every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithful minister and fellow servant in the Lord ;

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your souls.

9 With Onesimus a faithful and beloved brother who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus, sister's son to Barnabas, (touching whom ye received commandments : if he come unto you, receive him,)

11 And Jesus, who is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow workers unto the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort unto me.

2 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and those who are in Laodicea, and those in Hierapolis.

14 Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, greet you.

15 Salute the brethren who are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is in his house.

## THESSALONIANS—CHAP. I.

16 And when this epistle is read among you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus,

I, Paul, wrote the four chapters, called Paul's Epistle to the Colossians, and came in spirit and revised and corrected them about eighteen hundred years after I wrote them.

Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

## THE FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

## THESSALONIANS.

### CHAPTER I.

Paul's mindfulness of the Thessalonians.

**P**AUL, unto the church of the Thessalonians. Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We give thanks to God for you all, making mention of you in our prayers;

3 Remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ;

4 Knowing, brethren beloved, the love of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Spirit, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we are among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much af-

fliction, with joy of the Holy Spirit.

7 So that ye were examples to all that believe, in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For, from you, sounded out the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad;

9 For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God.

### CHAPTER II.

In what manner the gospel was brought and preached to the Thessalonians, and in what way also they received it—18 Paul's reason of long absence.

**F**OR yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain:

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye

## I. THESSALONIANS CHAP. III.

know, at Phillippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile :

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but God, who trieth our spirits.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloak of covetousness ; God is witness :

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children :

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travail : for labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holy and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you :

11 As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father doth his children,

12 That ye would walk wor-

thy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.

13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but, as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God which are in Judea : for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews.

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us ; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men :

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be blessed with us.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time in presence, not in spirit, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again ; but we were hindered.

19 For ye are our glory and joy.

### CHAPTER III.

He testifieth his great love to the Thessalonians—10 And praying for them, and desiring a safe coming unto them.

**WHEREFORE** when we could no longer forbear,



## I. THESSALONIANS—CHAP. IV.

we thought it good to be left, at Athens alone ;

2 And sent Timotheus, our brother, and minister of God, and our fellow labourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith :

3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions ; for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily, when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulation ; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

5 For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter might have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also desire to see you :

7 Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith :

8 For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God ;

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might per-

fect that which is lacking in your faith ?

11 Now God our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we do toward you :

13 To the end he may establish your minds unblameable in holiness before God, our Father.

### CHAPTER IV.

To go forward in godliness—6 To live holy and justly—9 To love one another—11 And quietly to follow their own business.

**F**URTHERMORE then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

2 For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from idolatry.

4 That every one of you should know how to possess his soul in sanctification and honour ;

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God :

6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter ; because that he

## I. THESSALONIANS—CHAP. V.

will receive the reward of his doing.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

8 He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his Holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly love ye need not that I write unto you: for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another.

10 And indeed I hope that ye do it toward all the brethren who are in Macedonia; but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more;

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you;

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing.

13 For if Jesus died and his spirit rose, even others who die will rise also.

14 Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

### CHAPTER V.

Paul exhorts to warn the unruly—3 Comfort the feeble—4 Pray

without ceasing—6 Quench not the spirit—Despise not prophesyings, and hold fast that which is good.

**N**OW we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.

2 See that none render evil for evil unto any man; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all men.

3 Rejoice evermore.

4 Pray without ceasing.

5 In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

6 Quench not the Spirit.

7 Despise not prophesyings.

8 Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.

9 Abstain from all appearance of evil.

10 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly.

11 Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.

12 Brethren, pray for us.

13 Greet all the brethren with a holy kiss.

14 I charge you by the Lord, that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren.

15 The love of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

I, Paul, wrote with mine own hand the First Epistle of Paul to the Thessalonians, and came in spirit about eighteen hundred years after, and revised and corrected it.

## II. THESSALONIANS—CHAP. II.

### THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

### THESSALONIANS.

#### CHAPTER I.

Paul certifieth them of the good opinion which he had of their faith, love, and patience.

**P**AUL unto the church of the Thessalonians :

2 Grace unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you toward each other aboundeth ;

4 So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure.

#### CHAPTER II.

He desireth their prayers, 3 testifieth what confidence he hath in them ; 6 to shun idleness and ill company, 10 and last of all concludeth with prayer and salutation.

**F**INALLY, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you :

2 And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men : for all men have not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithful, who shall stablish you, and keep you from evil.

4 And we have confidence

in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your spirits into the love of God.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For yourselves know how ye ought to follow us : for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you ;

8 Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought ; but wrought with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you.

9 For we hear that there are some who walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busy bodies.

10 Now those who are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.

11 But ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing.

12 And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no fellowship with him, that he may be ashamed.

13 Yet count him not as an

## I. TIMOTHY—CHAP. I.

enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

14 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.

15 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is

the token in every epistle : so I write.

16 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

† The second epistle to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

### THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHY.

#### CHAPTER I.

Timothy is put in mind of the charge which was given unto him by Paul—5 Of the right use and end of the law—11 Of Paul's calling to be an apostle.

**P**AUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope ;

2 Unto Timothy, my own son in the faith : Grace, mercy and peace from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord,

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith : so do.

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure mind and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned :

6 From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling ;

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law ; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if properly understood.

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For idolators, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine ;

11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry ;

13 Who was before a blasphem-

## I. TIMOTHY—CHAP. III.

mer, and a persecutor, and injurious : but I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief.

14 And the mercy of God was exceedingly abundant towards me.

15 Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all longsuffering,

16 For a pattern to them who should hereafter believe on him.

17 Now unto the eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare ;

19 Holding faith, and a good conscience ; which some having put away concerning faith have made shipwreck :

### CHAPTER II.

That it is meet to pray and give thanks for all men, and the reason why—9 How women should be attired—12 They are not permitted to teach, nor to usurp authority over men, and the reasons thereof.

**I** EXHORT therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men ;

2 For kings, and for all who are in authority ; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

3 For this is good and ac-

ceptable in the sight of God ;  
4 Who will have all men to be blessed and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God, and a mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus :

6 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle,

7 I speak the truth in Christ and lie not, a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

9 In like manner also, let the women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety ; not with braided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array ;

10 But, which becometh women professing godliness, with good works.

11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

13 But she shall have joy and gladness if she continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.

### CHAPTER III.

How bishops and deacons, and their wives, should be qualified—14 And to what end Paul wrote to Timothy of these things—15 Of the church, and the blessed truth therein taught and professed.

**T**HIS is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.

## I. TIMOTHY—CHAP. IV.

2 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach ;

3 Not given to wine, no striker, nor greedy of filthy lucre ; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous ;

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity ;

5 For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God ?

6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation.

7 Moreover he must have a good report of them who are without ; lest he fall into reproach and a snare.

8 Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre ;

9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proved ; and let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless.

11 Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.

13 For they who have used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in

the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly :

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

### CHAPTER IV.

He foretelleth that in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith—11 Neglect not the gift that is within thee.

**N**OW the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines that are false.

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy ; having their conscience seared as with a hot iron ;

3 Forbidding the priest to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them who believe and know the truth.

4 For the creatures of God are good, and not to be refused, if received with thanksgiving :

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 This is a faithful saying,

and worthy of all acceptation.

8 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God.

9 These things proclaim and teach.

10 And be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

11 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

12 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by the spirit of God.

13 Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear to all.

14 Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them; and thou shalt do thyself good, and those who hear thee.

#### CHAPTER V.

Rules to be observed in reproving—

9 Young women marry

**R**EBUKE not an elder, but entreat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren;

2 The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with purity.

3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.

4 But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew piety at home, and to requite their parents; for that is good and acceptable before God.

5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liveth in pleasure is liable to fall into sin.

7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless.

8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

9 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully.

10 Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

11 For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The labourer is worthy of his reward.

12 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

13 Those who sin, rebuke.

14 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

15 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.

CHAPTER VI.

Of the duty of servants—6 Godliness is great gain—10 And love of money tendeth to evil—11 What Timothy is to flee, and what to follow—17 And whereof to admonish the rich—18 To keep the purity of true doctrine, and to avoid profane janglings.

**L**ET those servants who are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness;

4 And keep not from perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth,

5 Supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself.

6 But godliness with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

9 But they who will be rich in worldly things fall into temptation and a snare, and

into many foolish and hurtful desires, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money tendeth to evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, and live a life of holiness, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession.

14 That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable.

15 Charge those who are rich in this world's goods, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;

16 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate;

17 Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may receive a blessing in the Spirit.

18 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and



## II. TIMOTHY—CHAP. I.

vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called :

19 Which some professing have erred concerning the

faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

† The first epistle to Timothy was written by Paul from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana

I, Paul, came in spirit, and revised and corrected the first epistle of Paul so Timothy, about eighteen hundred years after it was written.

### THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

## TIMOTHY

### CHAPTER I

Paul's love to Timothy, and the unfeigned faith which was in Timothy—5 He is exhorted to stir up the gift of God which was in him—11—And to persist in the form and truth of that doctrine which he had learned of him.

**P**AUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus,

2 To Timothy, my dearly beloved son : Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day ;

4 Greatly desiring to see thee being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy ;

5 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou be stired up in spirit, which was given thee by the putting on of my hands.

6 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear ; but of pow-

er, and of love, and of a sound mind.

7 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me who was a prisoner for preaching Christ : but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God ;

8 Who hath saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not according to our former works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us.

9 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

10 For the which cause I also suffer these things : nevertheless I am not ashamed ; for I know in whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him.

11 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

## II. TIMOTHY—CHAP. II.

12 That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Spirit which dwelleth in us.

13 God give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus ; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain :

14 But, when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

15 God grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day : and in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

### CHAPTER II.

Timothy is again exhorted to constancy—6 The husbandman is worthy of his hire—17 If a man purge himself from evil he shall be a vessel unto honour.

**T**HOU therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life ; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier.

5 And if a man strive also for masteries, yet he is not crowned, except he strive lawfully.

6 The husbandman who laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say : and

God give thee understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Jesus Christ who was of the seed of David that his spirit was raised from the dead, according to my gospel :

9 Wherein I suffer trouble, as an evil doer, even unto bonds ; but the word of God is not bound.

10 If we suffer with him we shall also reign with him : if we deny him, he also will deny us :

11 If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful : he cannot deny himself.

12 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord that they strive not about words to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers.

13 Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

14 But shun profane and vain babblings : for they will increase unto more ungodliness.

15 And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

16 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth ; and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

17 If a man therefore purge himself from evil, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work.

## II. TIMOTHY—CHAP. IV

18 Flee also from everything which is sin; follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on God out of a pure mind.

19 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes,

20 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient.

### CHAPTER III.

He speaks of perilous times to come and the enemies of the truth—10 Paul's persecutions—14 And commendeth the holy Scriptures.

**T**HIS know, when the new dispensation of Christ is about to come there shall be perilous times.

2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

3 Without natural affection, trucebrakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those who are good,

4 Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God;

5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

6 For they are ever learning, and do not come to the knowledge of the truth.

7 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith.

8 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall

be manifest unto the world.

9 But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience,

10 Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured; but out of them all God delivered me.

11 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

12 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

13 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them;

14 And that from a child thou hast known the holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

15 All Scripture given by inspiration of God, is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

16 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

### CHAPTER IV.

He exhorteth him to do his duty—6 Certifieth him of the nearness of his own death—8 Willeth him to come speedily.

**P**REACH the word; be instant in season; reprove rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine.

## II. TIMOTHY—CHAP. IV.

2 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine ; but after their own desires shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears ;

3 And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

4 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.

5 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

6 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith :

7 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which God, the righteous judge, shall give me, and to all those who love the appearing of the spiritual kingdom spoken of by Jesus Christ, when he was to come with ten thousand of his spirits or angels as a cloud, to overshadow the earth with their glory.

8 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me.

9 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica ; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

10 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee : for he is profitable to me for the ministry.

11 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

12 The cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou

comest, bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments.

13 Alexander the copper-smith did me much evil : God will reward him according to his works :

14 Of whom be thou aware also ; for he hath greatly withstood our words.

15 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me : I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge.

16 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me : that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear : and I was delivered out of their evil hands.

17 And God shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom : to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

19 Erastus abode at Corinth : but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

20 Do thy diligence to come before winter. And all the brethren greet thee.

21 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

---

† The second epistle unto Timothy, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

TITUS.

CHAPTER I.

For what end Titus was left in Crete  
—6 How they that are to be chosen  
ought to be qualified.

**P**AUL, a servant of God,  
and an apostle of Jesus  
Christ, according to the ac-  
knowledging of the truth  
which is after godliness ;

2 In hope of eternal life,  
which God, that cannot lie,  
promised before the world be-  
gan ;

3 But hath in due time man-  
ifested his word through  
preaching, which is committed  
unto me according to the com-  
mandment of God ;

4 To Titus, mine own son  
after the common faith : Grace,  
mercy, and peace, from God  
the Father and the Lord Je-  
sus Christ.

5 For this cause left I thee  
in Crete, that thou shouldst  
set in order the things that  
are wanting, and ordain el-  
ders of blameless men,

6 In every city, as I had ap-  
pointed thee :

7 For a bishop must be  
blameless, as the steward of  
God : not selfwilled, not soon  
angry, not given to wine, no  
striker, not given to filthy lu-  
cre ;

8 But a lover of hospitality,  
a lover of good men, sober,  
just, holy, temperate ;

9 Holding fast the faithful

word as he hath been taught,  
that he may be able by sound  
doctrine both to exhort and to  
convince the gainsayers.

10 For there are many unruly  
and vain talkers and de-  
ceivers, specially they of the  
circumcision :

11 Whose influence must be  
stopped, who subvert whole  
houses, teaching things which  
they ought not, for filthy lu-  
cre's sake.

CHAPTER II.

Directions given unto Titus, both for  
his doctrine and life—9 Of the duty  
of servants, and in general of all  
Christians.

**B**UT teach thou sound doc-  
trine :

2 That the aged men be so-  
ber, grave, temperate, sound  
in faith, in charity, in pa-  
tience.

3 The aged women likewise,  
that they be in behaviour as  
becometh holiness, not false  
accusers, not given to much  
wine, teachers of good things ;

4 That they may teach the  
young women to be sober, to  
love their husbands, to love  
their children,

5 To be discreet, chaste, keep-  
ers at home, good, obedient to  
their own husbands, that the  
word of God be not blas-  
phemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort  
to be sober-minded.

7 In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

9 Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things, not answering again;

10 Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity: that they may adorn the doctrine of God in all things.

11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared unto all men.

12 Teaching us to deny ungodliness and worldly desires, that we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world.

### CHAPTER III.

Titus is yet further directed by Paul, both concerning the things he should teach, and not teach—9 Avoid foolish questions—10 He appointeth both the time and place, wherein he should come unto him.

**P**UT them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work,

2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men.

3 For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, having evil desires and pleasures, living in malice

and envy, hateful, and hating one another.

4 But after that the kindness and love of God, though manifested through Jesus Christ, toward man appeared.

5 By works of righteousness, according to his mercy, he blessed us, by the working of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit.

6 Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our teacher.

7 And who constantly affirmed that they who have believed in God should be careful to maintain good works.

8 These things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 When shall I send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus; be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

11 Bring Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their journey, and see that they are well provided for.

12 And let our preachers also learn to maintain good works, that they may not be unfruitful.

13 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

† It was written to Titus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians, from Macedonia.

I, Paul, wrote the epistle of Paul to Titus, and came in spirit and revised and corrected it about eighteen hundred years after.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

PHILEMON.

---

CHAPTER I.

Paul rejoiceth to hear of the faith and love of Philemon—8 And desireth him to forgive his servant Onesimus, and lovingly to receive him again.

**P**AUL, a prisoner for preaching Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellow labourer,

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow soldier, and to the church in thy house :

3 Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers.

5 Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints ;

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you.

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the spirit of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds :

9 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now

profitable to thee and to me ;

10 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him.

11 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel :

12 But without thy mind would I do nothing ; that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly.

13 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him again.

14 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the spirit.

15 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as myself.

16 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account ;

17 I Paul have written this with mine own hand, I will repay it : albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me ; thou knowest.

18 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee, and refresh my spirit in the Lord.

19 Having confidence in thy obedience I wrote unto thee,

knowing that thou wilt also do more than I say.

20 Prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall come unto you.

21 There salute thee Epa-

phras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus;

22 Marcus, Aristarcus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow laborers.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits. Amen.

I, Paul, wrote the Epistle to Philemon with mine own hand, and came in spirit and revised and corrected it about eighteen hundred years after.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

# JAMES.

### CHAPTER I

We are to rejoice under trials—5 To ask wisdom of God, and in our trials not to impute our weakness, or sins, unto him—6 Ask in faith—24 Bridle not his tongue.

**J**AMES, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye have resisted temptations;

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith,

nothing wavering; for he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of God.

8 A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways.

9 Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted:

10 But may the rich be humbled: because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away.

11 Blessed is the man who endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of glory,

12 Which God hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God doth not tempt us to do evil.

14 But every man is tempt-



ed, when he is drawn away of his own desire, and enticed.

15 Then when evil desires hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin ; and sin, when it is finished, destroyeth much good.

16 Do not err, my beloved brethren.

17 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath :

18 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

19 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word.

20 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

21 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass :

22 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

23 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

24 If any man among you seem to be religious and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own spirit, this man's religion is vain.

25 Pure religion and undefiled before God the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction,

and to live a holy upright life.

## CHAPTER II

It is not agreeable to Christian profession to regard the rich—13 We are to be loving and merciful—14 And not to boast of faith where there are no works—17 Which is but a dead faith—21 Nor of Rahab.

**M**Y brethren, who have faith in our Lord Jesus Christ, you must not have respect of persons.

2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment ;

3 And ye have respect to him who weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place ; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool :

4 Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts ?

5 Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him ?

6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats ?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called ?

8 If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well :

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.

10 For he that said, Do not commit adultery\*, said also, Do not kill.

11 Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

13 For he shall have judgment without mercy, who hath shewed no mercy.

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

15 If a brother or sister be destitute of clothing or daily food,

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; and ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit?

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

19 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

20 Ye see then how that by

works a man is justified, and not by faith.

21 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

22 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

### CHAPTER III.

We are not rashly or arrogantly to reprove others—5 But rather to bridle the tongue, a little member, but a powerful instrument of much good, and great harm—13 The truly wise are mild, and peaceful, without envying and strife.

**M**Y brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation.

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth!

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole

\* Adultery sometimes means the worshiping of idols. Ez. 25: 37, and in many other places.

body, and setteth on fire the course of nature ;

7 Most all kinds of animals can be tamed by man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame.

9 Therewith bless we God, even the Father ; and therewith curse we men, who are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter ?

12 Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries ? either a vine, figs ? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you ? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.

14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your mind, glory not, and lie not against the truth.

15 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and evil work.

16 The wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

17 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

# CHAPTER IV.

We are to strive against covetousness, and rash judgment of others—9 And not to be too confident in the good success of worldly business, but mindful ever of the uncertainty of this life—12 Commit our affairs to God.

**F**ROM whence come wars and fightings among you ? come they not hence, of your evil desires that war in your members.

2 Ye desire, and have not : ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain : ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.

3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your evil desires.

4 Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the evil spirits, and they will flee from you.

5 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners ; and purify your spirits, ye double-minded.

6 Humble yourselves in the sight of God, and he shall lift you up.

7 Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and the law judgeth him.

8 Who art thou that judgest another ?

9 Go to now, ye who say, To day or to-morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain :

10 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow.

For what is the life of the body.

11 It is even as a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

12 For that ye ought to say, If God will, we shall live, and do this, or that.

13 But now ye rejoice in your boastings: all such rejoicing is evil.

14 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth not, to him it is sin.

# CHAPTER V.

Wicked rich men should fear God's displeasure—7 We ought to be patient in afflictions—12 To forbear swearing—13 To pray in adversity, to sing in prosperity—19 And to reclaim an erring brother to the truth.

**O** ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall disturb your peace. Ye have heaped treasure together, yet know not for what.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of those who have reaped are entered into the ears of God of Sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and ye have nourished your souls as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned and killed the just; and he doth not resist you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient; and establish your souls in well-doing.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: for every act shall bring its reward.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of God, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy who endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and that God is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea be yea; and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing spiritual songs.

14 Are any sick among you? let them call for the elders of the church to pray for them.

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord God of hosts shall raise them up.

## I. PETER—CHAP. I.

16 And pray ye one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.	do err from the truth, and one convert him ;
17 Brethren, if any of you	18 Let him know, that he who converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall hide a multitude of faults.

### THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL

TO

## PETER.

### CHAPTER I.

Peter blesseth God for his manifold spiritual graces ; showing that salvation in Christ was prophesied of old ; 13 and exhorteth them accordingly to a godly conversation, forasmuch as they are now anew by the word of God.

**P**ETER, a servant of God, to the churches scattered abroad,

2 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us unto a lively hope,

3 To an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,

4 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation.

5 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season,

6 If need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations :

7 That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold, tried with fire.

8 Unto whom it was reveal-

ed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them, who having preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven ; which things the angels desire to look into.

9 Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope in patience.

10 As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to former desires in your ignorance :

11 But as he who hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all your actions and desires.

12 Because God hath said, Be ye holy ; for I am holy.

13 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect to persons rewardeth according to every man's work,

14 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vanities, and vices, and erroneous traditions of your fathers.

## I. PETER—CHAP. II.

15 But by purifying your souls in obeying the truth, and see that ye love one another :

16 Being renewed in the Spirit, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

17 For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away.

18 But the spirit of mankind endureth forever. And this is the word of God, which by the gospel is preached unto you.

### CHAPTER II.

He exhorteth them from the breach of charity—Showing that Christ is the foundation whereupon they are built—He beseecheth them also to abstain from fleshly desires—13 to be obedient to magistrates—18 And teacheth servants to obey their masters—20 Patiently suffering for well doing, after the example of Christ.

**W**HEREFORE laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

2 As new-born babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby :

3 If so be ye have tasted that God is gracious.

4 To whom coming, as to a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God and precious,

5 Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God.

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner stone, elect, precious : and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore who believe he is precious : but unto those who are disobedient,

8 A stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to those who stumble at the word, being disobedient :

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people ; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light :

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God : who had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from desires which war against the soul ;

12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles : that, whereas they speak against you as evil doers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

13 Submit yourselves unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

14 For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may

## I. PETER—CHAP. III.

put to silence the ignorance of foolish men :

15 As free, and not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.

16 Do good to all men. Love God. Honour the king.

17 Servants, be subject to your masters with proper reverence, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the forward.

18 For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

19 For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.

20 For even hereunto were ye called : because Christ also suffered patiently, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps :

21 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth :

22 Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again ; when he suffered, he threatened not ; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously :

### CHAPTER III.

He teacheth the duty of wives and husbands to each other—8 Exhorting all men to unity and love—14 And to be patient under persecution—19 He declareth also the benefits of Christ toward the old world.

**L**IKEWISE, ye wives be in subjection to your own husbands ; that, if any obey

not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives ;

2 While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with love.

3 Whose adorning, let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel ;

4 But let it be the hidden man of the spirit, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands :

6 Even as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord : whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well.

7 Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life : that your prayers be not hindered.

8 Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another ; love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous :

9 Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing ; but contrariwise blessing ; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.

10 For he that will love life,

and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile :

11 Let him refrain from evil, and do good ; let him seek peace, and live for it.

12 For the eyes of God are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good ?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye : and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled ;

15 But sanctify the Lord God in your souls :

16 Having a good conscience ; that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ.

17 For Christ also hath once suffered, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit.

18 And after his spirit arose he went and preached to the spirits, who lived in the flesh, in the days of Noah, and who, since that time, have been confined or imprisoned, on account of their sins.

19 And Christ's spirit went and preached to them to wake them to righteousness, that they might be delivered from their bondage, and through faith and repentance by good works, might come into the glorious liberty of the sons of God.

CHAPTER IV.

He exhorts them to cease from sin by the example of Christ, and the consideration of the general end that now approacheth.

**F**ORASMUCH then as Christ hath suffered in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind :

2 That ye no longer should live in sin, but to the glory of God.

3 For the time past our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, evil desires, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries :

4 Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you :

5 But the end of our lives is at hand : be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.

6 And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves : for charity shall cover a multitude of sins.

7 Use hospitality one to another without grudging.

8 As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

9 If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God ; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth ; that God in all things may be glorified ; to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.



## I. PETER—CHAP. V.

10 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you :

11 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings ; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

12 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye ; for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth upon you : on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

13 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil doer, or as a busybody in other men's matters.

14 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed ; but let him glorify God on this behalf.

15 Wherefore, let them who suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

### CHAPTER V.

He exhorteth the elders to feed their flocks—5 The younger to obey.

**T**HE elders who are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed :

2 Feed the flock of God which

is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly ; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind ;

3 Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being examples to the flock.

4 And ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility : for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

6 Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time :

7 But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by the gospel of Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, establish and strengthen you in every good word and work.

8 To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

9 By Silvanus, a faithful brother unto you, as I suppose, I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

10 The church that is at Babylon, elected together with you, saluteth you ; and so doth Marcus my son.

11 Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity. Peace be with you all. Amen.

## II. PETER—CHAP. I.

### THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL

OF

## PETER.

### CHAPTER I.

Confirming them in hope—5 Peter exhorteth them by faith and good works, to make their calling sure—12 Whereof he is careful to remind them, knowing that his death is at hand—16 And warneth them to be constant in the faith of Christ.

**S**IMON Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God, the teachings of Jesus Christ :

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue;

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises; that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world, which comes through false or wrong desires.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance,

patience; and to patience, godliness;

7 And to godliness, brotherly kindness: and to brotherly kindness, charity.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdom of glory.

11 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

12 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance;

13 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

14 Moreover I will endeavour that ye may be able after my decease to have these things always in remembrance.

## II. PETER—CHAP. II.

15 For he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

16 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

17 We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your souls.

18 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation.

19 For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but the holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy spirits.

### CHAPTER II.

He foretelleth them of false teachers, shewing the impiety and punishment both of them and their followers—7 From which the godly shall be delivered, as Lot was out of Sodom—10 And more fully describeth the manners of those profane and blasphemous seducers, whereby they may be the better known, and avoided.

**B**UT there were false prophets also among the people, even as there will be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in heresies, even denying the Lord.

2 And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

3 But chiefly those who walk

after their evil desires, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

4 Whereas angels, who are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

5 But they shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the daytime.

6 Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you;

7 Who worship idols and will not cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: their minds they have exercised with covetous practices;\*

8 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the ways of unrighteousness;

9 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb beast speaking with man's voice forbade the madness of the prophet.

10 These are as wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom upon them is the mist of darkness.

11 For when they speak great swelling words through pride and vanity, they allure others to follow their pernicious ways.

12 While they promise them

\* Ez. 23 : 37 ; Exodus 32 : 6 ; Jer. 3 : 8 : 9 stones and stocks.

## I. JOHN—CHAP. III.

liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption : for of whom a man is overcome, by the same is he brought in bondage.

13 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the teachings of Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the last end is worse with them than the beginning.

14 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

### CHAPTER III.

He exhorteth them to be mindful of the prophets' words, and be steadfast in faith.

**T**HIS second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you ; in both of which I stir up your

I, Peter, came in spirit, and revised and corrected the books called first and second of Peter. I wrote those two books while in the flesh, more than eighteen hundred years ago.

pure minds by way of remembrance :

2 That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 God is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness ; but is long-suffering toward us, not willing that any should sin, but that all should come to repentance and knowledge of the truth.

4 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, and fall from your own steadfastness.

5 Grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

## THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL

OF

## JOHN.

### CHAPTER I.

John exhorteth the Church to have fellowship one with another.

**T**HE elder unto the churches concerning those things which we have seen and heard about the present and the future life which was manifested unto us through the holy spirits.

2 For the life was manifested, and we bear witness, and explain unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us :

3 That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us : and truly

## I. JOHN—CHAP. III.

our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we do not tell the truth :

7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another.

8 If we say that we have no sin,

9 Or say that we have not sinned, we deceive ourselves.

### CHAPTER II

He exhorteth them against sin, and to love their brethren.

**M**Y little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not.

2 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now.

3 He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

4 But he that hateth his brother is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his mind.

5 They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they

would no doubt have continued with us; but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

6 I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

### CHAPTER III.

He declareth the singular love of God towards us, in making us his sons—3 Who therefore ought obediently to keep his commandments—5 And also to love one another as brethren.

**B**EHOLD, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law; for sin is the transgression of the law.

5 For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

6 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

7 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

8 But whoso hath this world's goods, and seeth his

brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

9 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.

10 Beloved, if our spirit condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.

11 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

12 And he that keepeth the commandments of God, dwelleth in him. And hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

#### CHAPTER IV.

Try the spirits—3 Love one another, and love God—8 No man hath seen God—11 God is love.

**B**ELOVED, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because evil spirits as well as good are in the world.

2 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is of God, and knoweth God.

3 He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love.

4 In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent Jesus

Christ into the world, for our example.

5 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to preach the gospel.

6 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also love one another.

7 No man hath seen God at any time.

8 Hereby know we that God dwells in us, because we love him.

9 And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to lead us from the paths of error and sin, unto righteousness and true holiness.

10 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that loveth God, God dwelleth in him.

11 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.

12 We love him, because he first loved us.

13 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is mistaken; for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?

14 And this have we from him. That he who loveth God love his brother also.

## II. JOHN—CHAP. I.

### THE SECOND EPISTLE

OF

JOHN.

#### CHAPTER I.

He exhorteth to persevere in Christian love.

**T**HE elder unto the well beloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all those who have know the truth;

2 For the truth's sake, which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever.

3 Grace be with you, mercy, and peace from God the Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoiced greatly that I found thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee, Gaius, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto

thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. These are deceivers and antichrists.

7 Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

8 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the teachings of Christ, hath not the love of God in him. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he loveth both the Father and the Son.

9 Having many things to say unto you, I would not write with paper and ink: but I trust to come unto you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full.

### THE THIRD EPISTLE

OF

JOHN.

#### CHAPTER I.

He commendeth Gaius for his piety, and hospitality.

**T**HE elder unto the well beloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

3 For I rejoiced greatly, when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is

### III. JOHN—CHAP. II.

in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.

5 Which have borne witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well:

6 Because that for his name's sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

7 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow helpers to the truth.

8 I wrote unto the church: but Diotrephes, who loveth to

have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.

9 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good.

10 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself; yea, and we also bear record; and ye know that our record is true.

11 I have many things to say, but I will not with pen and ink write them unto thee.

12 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

I, John, came in spirit and revised and corrected the three books, called, First, Second, and Third Epistles of John, and rejoice in God that I have the opportunity of doing it. I am the spirit of the person who wrote those three books, and also the book called Revelation.

## THE GENERAL EPISTLE

OF

## JUDE.

### CHAPTER I.

Jude exhorteth them to contend for the faith—6 Pronounces woe unto them who worship idols—8 Enoch prophesied of Christ—Mockers.

**J**UDE, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father.

2 Mercy unto you, and peace, and love, be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto

you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

4 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that God, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.

5 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities about them, in like manner giving



themselves over to idolatry, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example.

6 Woe unto them ! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Korah.

7 These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you.

8 Raving waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame, wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness.

9 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

10 To convince all who are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have committed.

11 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own desires ; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage.

12 But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ :

13 How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly desires.

14 These are they who separate themselves and are sensual, having not the spirit of truth.

15 But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the holy spirit.

16 Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal glory.

17 And of some have compassion, making a difference :

18 Now unto him who is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,

19 To the only wise God be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

# THE REVELATION

OF

ST. JOHN THE DIVINE.

## CHAPTER I.

Introduction—4 John writeth his revelation to the seven churches of Asia, signified by the seven golden candlesticks—14 Christ's glorious power and majesty.

**T**HE Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must come to pass; and he Jesus signified by his own spirit unto his servant John, who wrote it as he understood it from the spirit.

2 Blessed is he who readeth, and they who hear the words of this prophecy.

3 **J**OH N to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and peace, from him who is, and who was, and who is to come; and from the seven spirits which are before his throne;

4 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him who loved us be honour and praise.

5 And to God the Father be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

6 Behold, he cometh in his glory like a cloud to overshadow the earth.

7 I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation,

8 And in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was on the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

9 I was entranced by Christ's spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

10 Saying, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

11 And I turned to see where the voice came from and who spake unto me. And being turned, I saw what appeared like seven golden candlesticks.

12 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks I saw the Son of man, clothed with a white garment down to the foot, and girt about the breast with a golden girdle.

13 And his hair was white like wool, as white as snow: and his eyes shone with glory and delight.

14 And his feet shone like unto fine polished gold; and his voice was charming.

15 And he had in his right

## REVELATION—CHAP. II.

hand seven stars : and out of his mouth went the word of truth like a sharp two-edged sword and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

16 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not ;

17 I am he that liveth, and was dead ; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen.

18 Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are told you, and the things which shall be hereafter told you ;

19 The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels \* of the seven churches : and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches.

### CHAPTER II.

What is commanded to be written to the angels, that is, the ministers of the churches of 1 Ephesus—8 Smyrna—12 Pergamos—18 Thyatira : and what is commanded, or found wanting in them.

**U**NTO the angel of the church of Ephesus write ; These things saith he who holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks ;

2 I know thy works, and thy labour and thy patience, and

how thou canst not bear those who are evil : and thou hast tried them who say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars :

3 And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

5 Remember thereform from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works ; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of its place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 He who hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirits saith unto the churches ; To him who overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write ; These things saith the first and the last, who was dead, and is alive ;

9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty in worldly things, but thou art rich in spiritual things ; and I know the blasphemy of those who say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer by them ; behold, the wicked opposer shall cast some of you

\* Angels meaning preachers.

## REVELATION—CHAP. II.

into prison, that ye may be tried ; and ye shall have tribulation ten days : be thou faithful unto death ; and thou shalt have a crown of glory.

11 He who hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches ; He who overcometh shall be exalted in the spirit life.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write ; These things saith he who hath the sharp sword with two edges ;

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where the opposer's seat is : and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where the opposer dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there those who hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols and who also worshiped idols.

15 So hast thou also who hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent ; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against thee with the sword of my mouth, which is the spirit of truth.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches ; To him that overcometh will I

give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write ; These things saith he whose hair was white as wool and feet as polished gold ;

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy last works ; to be more than the first.

20 Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, who calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to worship idols and to eat things sacrificed unto them,

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication ; and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into great tribulation, and those that worship idols with her.

23 And all the churches shall know that I am he who searcheth the reins and spirits : and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of the opposers as they speak ; I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye have already, and he who overcometh

## REVELATION—CHAP. III.

eth, and keepeth my works unto death shall have a crown of glory.

26 He who hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

### CHAPTER III.

The angel of the church of Sardis is reproved—3 Exhorted to repent, and threatened if he do not repent—7 The angel of the church of Philadelphia—10 Is approved for his diligence and patience—14 The angel of Laodicea is rebuked, for being neither hot nor cold—19 And admonished to be more zealous—20 Christ standeth at the door and knocketh.

**A**ND unto the angel of the church in Sardis write: These things saith he who hath the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art nearly dead.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee in an hour when you think not of.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis who have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

6 He that hath an ear, let

him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he who hath the sharp two edged sword proceeding out of his mouth.

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it; for thou hast a little strength, and has kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, they are of the synagogue of opposers who say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them who dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 He who overcometh shall be made a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him a new name.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot; I would thou wert cold or hot.

## REVELATION—CHAP. IV.

16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten; be zealous therefore, and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 He that overcometh shall sit down with me in my Father's throne.

22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

### CHAPTER IV.

3 The marriage of the Lamb—6 The angel will not be worshipped.

**A**ND a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye who fear him, both small and great.

2 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty

thunderings, saying, Alleluia, for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

3 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him, for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

4 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for this represents the righteousness of saints.

5 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they who are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb.

6 And I was about to fall at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, do it not: I am the spirit of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

7 And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True.

8 And on his head was a crown of gold; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

9 And he was clothed with a vesture which was as red as blood, with a golden girdle around his breast; and his name is called the Word of God.

10 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, and clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

11 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, which is the word of truth, that with it he should smite the nations;

## REVELATION—CHAP. VI.

12 And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

13 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him who sat on the horse, and against his army.

14 And they were slain with the sword of him who sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth.

### CHAPTER V.

A new heaven and a new earth.

1 And I heard a voice in heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

2 In the spirit-life there shall be no more sickness, pain or death, for the former things are passed away.

3 And from the faithful and true, God will wipe away all tears from their eyes, and there shall be no more sorrow nor crying; and I will be their God, and they shall be my sons and daughters, saith God Almighty.

4 And he said unto me, Write, for these words are true and faithful.

5 And he said unto me, I will give unto him who is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

6 He who overcometh shall inherit a blessing; and I will

be his God, and he shall be my son.

### CHAPTER VI.

The river of the water of life—2 The tree of life—4 The light of the city of God is himself—8 The angel will not be worshipped.

AND he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month.

3 And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him.

4 And there shall be no night in the spirit world; they need no candle, neither light of the sun, for the Lord God giveth them light and they shall live for ever and ever.

5 And he said unto me, The Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must come to pass.

6 Behold, I come in spirit; blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book, and teach them.

7 And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who shewed me these things.

8 Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not; for I am

## REVELATION—CHAP. VI.

thy fellow-servant, the spirit of Jesus Christ the mediator, worship God.

9 Behold, I come in the spirit: and my reward is with me, and every man shall have as his work shall be.

10 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life.

11 I Jesus testify unto you

these things that ye may send them unto the churches. I am the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.

12 He who testifieth these things saith, Surely I come: Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.

13 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.

Amen.

The book called Revelation, was written about sixty years after the death of Christ, by St. John the Divine; who wrote the books called First, Second, and Third John, and it was revised and corrected by the Spirit of Jesus Christ, about one thousand seven hundred and sixty-eight years from the time it was written. I, Jesus, do testify to this fact.

JESUS THE CHRIST.



## REVELATIONS 1st Ch.



I, JESUS, came in Spirit, as represented above, and described in Revelations, 1st, 6 to 16; and my Spirit talked to John on the Isle of Patmos, and told him what to say to the churches, which I and my apostles had established, when in the flesh on earth; also described my coming, to reign as King in the Spirit World.

KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. Rev. 4, 7 to 11.



I regret that the world has not better understood what my mission was on the earth, and also my condition in the Spirit World. I was born to be a King ; when ? and where ? not in this world, but in the World of Spirits ; and I was anointed King in eighteen hundred and forty-seven ; and I now come forth as represented above, on a white horse, and as spoken of in Revelations, 4th, 7 to 11 ; also in Daniel ; and many of the prophets have likewise spoken of me.

There are similar rules and regulations in the Spiritual World as there are in the Temporal ; hence there must be a Ruler or King, to whom all of the spirits who ever inhabited this earth must be subject ; and I am that King, or Ruler, subject only to God, who is the great Head of the whole universe.

# NEW DISPENSATION.

BY THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST.

## CHAPTER I.

1. New Era. 6. Heal the Sick.  
8. Spirits of Departed with you. 11.  
Reward. 17. All conditions of Spi-  
rits.

**I** JESUS, appeared in Spirit in 1861, and do say and declare unto the world that the new era or dispensation has commenced, called the coming of Christ.

2 It commenced about the year 1847, and as represented and spoken of by the prophet Daniel and others,\* by my coming as a cloud in the heavens, with tens of thousands of angels, to overshadow the earth with my glory.

3 This is the day referred to, and now I come with tens of thousands of my angels or Spirits, to commune with the children of men, and to establish God's everlasting Spiritual Kingdom on the earth, of which there shall be no end.

4 And now in different ways we commune with, and make ourselves known unto the children of men; and many who are now in the flesh have seen some of us, and talked with us; face to face: and we rejoice that the day is come.

5 And if you will listen to us, we will do you much good.

6 Through our mediums we heal the sick, cure the lame, and cast out evil spirits, and aid those who seek after knowledge, in the arts and sciences; the same as was done when I and my apostles lived in the flesh on the earth.

7 The work, as it were, has but just commenced; it will roll on with power until the earth is filled with my glory.

8 You all, more or less, have the spirits of the departed with you; who, more or less, control your actions; your guardian spirits are mostly similar to your own.

9 And it is of great importance to you that you live holy, righteous, and godly, in this present world.

10 By thus living, you have mostly good and holy Spirits with you, who control you more or less, and they being good Spirits, control you for good.

11 Hence you see the importance of living good and holy lives. Every act will bring its reward, and there is no respect of persons.

12 Although you may not

\* Daniel 2 ch., 44, 45; Daniel 7 ch., 9, 10, 13, 14, 18, 22, 27; Daniel 10 ch. 5, 6; Rev. 1 ch., 6, 13 to 18; Jude 9; Matthew 12 ch., 40, 41, 49, 50; Matthew 23 ch., 21, 22; John 18 ch., 33, 34.

## NEW DISPENSATION.

get your reward here in this life, yet it is sure to come.

13 If in any way you comfort or do your fellow creatures good ; you will surely get your reward.

14 And if in any way you intentionally injure your fellow creatures, you will surely get your reward. He that is wise is wise for himself ; and he who doeth evil shall bear it.

15 Only congenial and harmonious spirits will be your associates in the spirit land, whatever may be your condition.

16 If you are in a high condition in the spirit land, while you remain in the high spheres, no low or evil spirit can harm or disturb you ; but when you leave the higher spheres, and come among the low spirits, they can disturb, but not harm you.

17 each one, both high and low, have their associates, who are harmonious, and congenial spirits.

18 There is every condition in the spirit land, from the lowest state of unhappiness, to the highest state of glory.

19 All will have the blessings and enjoyments in the spirit land which they live for : and all may become holy and happy spirits if they live for it.

20 No deception can be used in the spirit land between Spirits, but they can deceive those in the flesh :

you will there see as you are seen, and know as you are known.

21 You who injure in any way your fellow creatures, or use fraud or deception to their harm, will have your reward.

22 But you cannot deceive those in the spirit world, they can know, and see all that you do, say, and think, even while you are in the flesh.

23 I beseech you all who live in the flesh ; also those in the spirit land, to lose no time in improving your minds for a high condition in the spirit world.

### CHAPTER II.

1. Mis-spent Time, Folly and Sin.  
5. Your Condition when entering the Spirit World. 8. By Prayer and Repentance your Sins will not be blotted out. 13. Justice of God.  
14. Those who try to Improve the World. The Day is not far distant, &c.

**T**HIS mortal state is a preparatory scene for the future and everlasting Immortality in the Spirit World. You must improve your minds while here, and grow in knowledge, wisdom, righteousness and holiness, or you will find yourselves in a low condition when you come into the Land of Spirits ; when you have been born again, not of the flesh, but of the Spirit.

2. He that is born of the

## NEW DISPENSATION.

flesh is subject to the conditions of the flesh, and he who is born again, and of the Spirit,\* is subject only to the conditions of the Spirit.

3. Hence you will see the importance of improving your Spirits while in the flesh, that you may be exalted Spirits when you come into the Spirit World.

4. If you spend your time while in the flesh, in sin, intemperance, profanity, idleness, folly, and vanity; by thus doing you will bring yourselves into a low and debased condition;

5. And when you enter the Spirit World, you will find yourself a low debased Spirit; and then you will discover your debased and low condition, and know that then and there, all of your actions appear naked and open to the view of all the Spirit World.

6. Then you will look back with regret and remorse upon your mis-spent time. Then and there will all your intemperance and mis-spent time, sins, vanities, follies and mis-usages of your fellow beings be heaped upon you.

7. Then you will see that in proportion as your lives have been spent in the flesh, will be your condition in the Spirit World.

8. The World is now taught to believe that by asking in prayer and faith, the consequences of their sins will be blotted out, and the load of guilt be removed, without receiving the reward for their deeds.

9. I, Jesus, never thus taught; but have taught you before, and now teach you, that you must be rewarded according to your deeds, whether they be good, or whether they be evil.

10. And that there is no such thing as being released from the consequences of your deeds, until you have received your full reward.

11. And when you have knowingly and willingly injured in any way, by word or deed, your fellow beings, you will surely get your reward.

12. I intreat you all, both in the Temporal and Spiritual World, to repent of all your evil deeds, and to pay the debt of sin and ingratitude, which is incumbent upon you, that you may free yourselves from your load of oppression, and become holy and happy Spirits of God.

13. Remember God is just, and that Truth and Justice must prevail.

14. All who try to do good in the world, and try to im-

\* From 2d verse. Being born of the Spirit, is when the body dies, and the Spirit comes forth a Spirit Body; this is the new birth, or Resurrection, or being born of the Spirit.

## NEW DISPENSATION.

prove the condition of their fellow creatures, may expect opposition from Spirits of a low condition, both from those in the flesh and out.

15. Because wisdom, truth and justice do not harmonize with their folly, ignorance and low condition; hence you must try, as far as in you lies, to be vigilant, determined and bold in the cause of wisdom, truth, justice and humanity.

16. The day is not far distant, when the condition of this World will be materially changed, and wisdom, light, knowledge, truth and justice will burst forth to enlighten and bless the earth. But before this shall be fulfilled great sorrows, mourning, and weeping will be felt in all the Earth. Prepare, O, ye inhabitants of the Earth, for that day!

### CHAPTER III.

1. Wonderful Age. 3. Opening of the Spirit World. 6. Cleanse the Sanctuary.

**F**OR this is truly a wonderful age; one which was foretold by the ancient prophets, an age in which man's spirit would be directed to the perception of things which were once thought to be the sole mysteries of the Deity.

2 The veil is being removed that shuts the spirit world from the knowledge of mor-

tals, and in this wonderful event the divine love is essentially manifested.

3 And that the spirit world is now being opened to the comprehension of man is truly a source of gratitude and praise.

4 In darkness deep and fearful is that mind which is not now (through wilfulness) a recipient of that blessed light which sheds its glorious rays over the dark and benighted condition of this world.

5 This glorious day has been seen with raptures by the truly wise in all ages; and they have prospectively anticipated the excellence of that day, by a foretaste of its glory by communing with kindred spirits.

6 This is the day when the sanctuary\* should be cleansed, and when the Anointed shall ride victorious: King of Kings, and Lord of Lords.

7 And with the sword of his mouth, shall slay error, and establish justice, truth and righteousness.

8 I entreat you, quench not the spirit, despise not prophesyings, hold fast that which is good, and live holy and upright lives, and blessings, and glory, and honor shall be your reward.

JESUS, THE CHRIST.

Daniel 8 ch., 13, 14.